



**For more African books PDF Free Download please visit
<https://novelsguru.com/>**

Prologue

Often our parents teach us to protect our younger siblings because when they are gone they are the only family we have left. And that's what my parents taught me from the day Ivy was born but little did I know that protecting her would and keeping her safe at all costs would lead to my downfall.

Here I am today behind bars all in the name of keeping my little sister Yvette safe and out of prison.

You see, never in my life did I think I'd end up behind bars eating the crappy food they feed us on a daily wearing the clothes they make you wear in prison and being bullied by the other inmates. My life has been miserable from day one and like any other day I was in the doctor's office yet again, I was stabbed in the showers by one of the inmates because I refused to pleasure her as she had instructed me to. My lawyer was working on a way to reduce my sentence turns out they don't take killing another human lightly.

So here I am today with a stab wound on the side of my stomach. I've always been a cheeky stubborn child, well the day things went south at home so you can imagine, I don't take crap from anyone.

Her: So Yolanda Graham. Tell me what's your story. You here three times a week and we never talk about where you come from

I was now sitting in my therapist's office. It had gotten to a point where I was forced into seeing a therapist because they believe that whatever it is that makes me this cheeky resides from deep within.

Me: because doc as sweet as you are. You can't help me

Her: but I can try

Me: doc you can't try and save everyone. In this world we live in some people just don't want to be saved

Her: some people or just you?

Me: my sister didn't want to be saved

Her: now we getting somewhere. Wanna tell me about your sister maybe?

I sipped on the glass of water in front of me and leaned back on my chair dating back to the day I was arrested for a crime I did not even commit.

Me: "I hate you" she said, "I never want to see you again." She said in between her tears. It was then that I realised I had gone too far in trying to protect her that I ended up losing her in the process. I remember it like it was yesterday

Her: what happened between you two?

Me: you want the long version or the short?

Her: we have all the time in the world Miss Graham. In case you haven't noticed

Me: I know. life sentence

I took a deep breath and tucked my hair behind my ear and sat properly on the chair.

My name is Yolanda Graham. I'm 25 years old and this is my life before things went south.

Chapter 1

All my life I've spent it trying to make sure that Yvette doesn't go through the pain I went through. Be it bullying in school or the abuse we endured by our parent's hands. Our parents were the best you could ever ask for, when Yvette was born it was like the heavens were rejoicing because it was a beautiful sunny day. My sister was 6 and I was 10, she was the best thing to ever happen to me because then I had a friend in her and she had a friend in me. our family was happy and we never had any problems. A few months into the year my dad got a promotion at work, he made partner. We were happy and everything was going as it should until one day about a month later from his promotion dad came back in distress after having lost his job because it was found out that he had committed fraud and cost the company millions. We were living off of mom's salary as a nurse in the local hospital and things were fine but not many men take kindly to being dependent on their wife for everything, even toiletries and that's when things went south. Dad started drinking and he became abusive towards mom, at first it was the little things like a slap on the face and then it went from a slap to punches and kicks and from that he started belting her to a point where she would miss work for a whole week. Many would ask why she didn't leave him the minute he laid a hand on her? I know cause I asked myself the same question but it's not that easy. Dad was out drinking at the local

tavern and mom had packed up all of our clothes and we were ready to hit the road as soon as my sister and I came back from school. My sister was a daddy's little girl and she didn't know about the abuse, mom and I made sure of it. We had just gotten out of school and we were waiting for mom to come fetch us like she normally did but instead daddy showed up. He looked cleaner than normal.

Him: hello girls

Ivy: daddy

Yvette jumped into daddy's arms and he welcomed her into a bone crushing hug.

Him: Yola

I just stood there looking at him waiting for me to jump into his arms but I stood my ground

Me: Where's mummy?

Him: mummy is a little caught up so I thought I should fetch you today

I nodded and he took my hand into his and we headed home while Ivy told him about her day at school. The minute we walked in mom was passed out on the kitchen floor with blood all over her body you could barely recognise her beautiful face.

I went to kneel beside and brought my head closer to her nose and she was still breathing.

Me: mummy please wake up

She didn't respond. I shook her but she still didn't respond even though she was breathing.

Me: daddy mummy is not waking up. We have to help her

Him: mummy should be more careful next time

I don't care what age you are but that sounded ridiculous to me because I knew that he was responsible for the state my mother was in. he was still carrying Ivy in his arms but he had buried her face in his neck so as to prevent her from seeing. He took her to the room and then came back to find me still kneeling beside her crying

Me: mummy please don't leave us.

Him: here. Call the ambulance. I'm going out for a drink

That's all he said after handing me his phone and walking out on me on that kitchen floor. I couldn't believe this. This man didn't care about his wife

Advertisement

the woman he married without a gun to his head, the foothold of this family. He just did not care. A week passed and mom

was still in hospital and in that week dad would come home with different woman and sometimes he would come home with his drinking friends and they would spend the night in our family home. It was a Sunday and Ivy and I had just gotten back from church, dad wasn't around instead his bestie was in our home drinking our father's beer. We greeted and Ivy ran to the room to put our things because I knew dad would come home expecting me to have cooked. Yes, that is what it had gotten to. I had to learn how to cook or else we would go to bed on an empty stomach.

“you have really beautiful legs”

A voice said from behind me. Fear crept in and my heart started racing. I've always been afraid of this particular friend because of the way he would look at me. I don't know when he got to me but the next thing I remember was him sweating on top of me telling me how tight I was and that I should keep myself that way. when he was done he put a R100 note in my dress pocket and told me that it would be our little secret and to promise to not tell anyone or else he would go after my little sister and kill both my parents. Like any big sister I had to keep Ivy safe and so I washed and kept my mouth shut. The pain between my legs was unbearable but I didn't want to have my parents killed. Yes, maybe my father was a nonsense of a parent but I was only 10, I wasn't ready to lose my parents just

yet. So I kept it to myself. Dad came back from wherever and I had just finished cooking.

Him: why are you walking like that?

Me: I sprained my ankle at church playing skipping with the other kids He bought it without asking any further questions... because he really didn't care. I handed him his food and took our plates to our room and Ivy and I ate in silence. After having finished all my chores for the day I went to bed and just let it all out in floods of tears. I cried until I fell asleep.

Chapter 2

Mom was back home from the hospital after two whole weeks in there and two weeks of misery from my father's friend back at home. He hasn't been around ever since mom got back. I was not myself anymore, I wasn't the happy fun free spirited child I once was before everything. This man had taken part of me the minute he started forcing himself onto me. So many times I've considered death but I didn't want my sister to go through what I was going through and so I lived. Mom wasn't herself anymore, after sometime in hospital she came back a changed woman, a stranger to be exact because she just didn't care about us anymore. She started drinking too and I don't even know where she got the money to buy booze but she had it. We were on our way to school and we hadn't eaten in two days' now

Me: mom

Her: What?

Me: can we have money for bread?

Her: do I look an atm to you?

I didn't know how to respond to that. What had happened to my sweet loving caring mother? This monster before me was not the woman that gave birth to me. I shook my head

Her: you're a girl. Man pay to use what you have between your legs little girl. use it to your advantage and you will never go hungry again

I looked at her expecting her to say she was joking or something or whatever but she was as serious as a heart attack.

Her: get out of my sight!

I walked out to the lounge and pulled my little sister's hand and then we walked to school.

Ivy: Lala

That's what she called me. it was a name she gave me and has stuck with me for as long as I can remember.

Me: yes, Ivy?

Her: why does mom hate us?

Me: she doesn't hate us baby. She's just stressed

Her: what's stressed?

Me: she's just going through things that are making her be the way she is now

Her: so stress makes you mean?

I chuckled

Me: I guess it does.

Her: Lala I'm hungry

Me: I know baby. Me too

We walked past this other big shop owned by this other nice foreigner. I asked Ivy to wait for me outside while I went inside to try get him to give me something to eat.

Me: my friend

Him: hello Lala. How can I help you today?

Me: can we have something to eat. My sister and I haven't eaten for two days now. I promise I will pay it off by working here

Him: uhhhm

Me: please sir we starving. I can work here after school every day and you won't have to pay me

Him: tell you what. I will give you guys something to eat. Later on come by and I will give you guys a few groceries

Me: thank you so much

He gave me two sandwich boxes and I walked out to find Ivy talking to my father's friend. And he was playing with her hair. Immediately it sent chills down my spine and it was not the good kind of chills. It scared me to think that he would dare try what he did with me to my little sister.

Him: Yolanda

Me: hello. Ivy we have to get to school

Him: wait what's the rush. Look it's raining, get into my car and I will drive you

I shook my head and he brushed my sister's hair back

Him: come on now Yola you don't want to do that

Me: fine. Please just leave her alone.

Him: that's a good girl

We got into his car and he drove us to school. I was made to sit in the front seat while Ivy sat in the back. He put his hand on my thigh underneath my skirt and made his way to my underwear and started fiddling with my vjayjay

Him: ever since your mother got back I haven't been getting my daily bread

He said unzipping his pants. He stopped playing with me down there and took my hand and placed it on his hard shaft and made me give him a hand job. We got to school a while after he had released. He put R50 in my school skirt and then gave me a tissue to wipe my hands and told me to wash my hands before going to class and that's what I did the minute I got inside the school grounds. I was disgusted by myself but I told myself that whatever happens I won't let this stand in the way of my

future. I wasn't going to let this stand in my way of trying to live a better life for me and my sister. When I came home with a packet of groceries dad wasn't happy. He assumed that I was sleeping with the shop owner while mom on the other hand was proud that I was using my God given gift to get things done. That night I slept with my whole body sore from all the belt whooping's I got from my dad. The next morning mom walked in and covered my bruises and told me not to stop doing what I'm doing and she took the R50 I had gotten and told me to go and make some more. Said she was proud of me. Every time I came home with groceries the more whooping's I got until 5 months later we lost my father to TB and now I was left with mom. Dad's death was like an invitation to a life I never imagined for myself. Mom started prostituting me out

Advertisement

told me school will only get me so far but my looks were all I could bank on and the little gift I have between my legs was going to take me places.

.

.

I was now 16 and Ivy was 12, things at home were still the same. We lived off of the money I got from sleeping with the many men who didn't get enough satisfaction from home and

mom couldn't be happier. Ivy and I had just gotten back from school and mom was sitting in the lounge drinking with a friend.

Her: hey come back here. Both of you

We walked in and sat down. due to the circumstances I was a very cheeky child and had so much anger but through it all I protected Ivy at all costs. Other kids in school called me all sorts of names but the minute they called my sister such names, then it was their funeral. I was probably in the principal's office almost every day of the week. Some of my teachers in school were my clients. Yes, my mother was pimping me out.

Us: Ma

Her: Ivy

Ivy: ma

Her: it's about time you helped your sister out. My clients are complaining saying she's worn out and they want something new

Me: what? No!

Mom: I wasn't talking to you. I was talking to Yvette.

Me: you can use me all you want but Yvette is not going to be your slave, I won't allow you to

Now I know you probably wondering why we never went to child support services or ran away or did something. we weren't so fortunate to have met our relatives. All our lives it's just been the four of us... now three and we haven't had anywhere to run too. the streets were not an option. It's not that I enjoyed what I was doing but I would rather do this than to not know where my sister is or what she goes to bed having eaten or anything of that sort. I lived for my sister and as long as she was ok and untouched then I was good and I was willing. I had two friends and only one of those friends knew about what was going on back at home. Ariana has offered to take us in but I don't want to burden her and mom threatened to sell Ivy if ever we ran away from home.

Mom: so you talk back to me now?

Me: mom please. She's only 12

Her: and you started having sex when you were 10. Don't be stingy

Me: Ivy go to the room

Mom: Ivy stay

Ivy got up and went to our room with mom shouting for her to come back in the lounge. We were standing up facing each other

Her: you must think just because you having sex now we the same age. I'm still your mother

Me: start acting like it

She attempted to slap me but I held her arm

Me: it's funny how you need to remind yourself that you our mother when it suits you but you never act like it when opportunity presents itself for you to. Our mother died the day dad beat you up into a pulp.

I let go of her arm and walked to our room. I called Ari, it was about time Ivy left home.

Chapter 3

Phone Conversation

Me: Ari

Her: hey babe what's up?

Me: I need a favour

Her: shoot

Me: can Ivy come live with you

Her: yeah sure no problem

Me: thanks friend. We'll be there in an hour

Her: ok cool

Me: thanks a milli

Her: no need to thank me

End of conversation

By the time I was done talking Ivy was standing by the door looking at me. You see the thing about Ari is that she's a good hearted person and the best friend anyone could ever have and she would literally drop anything to help me out and I would do that same for her.

Me: come sit

I said patting next to me on the bed

Her: you want me to go live with your friend

Me: just for a while until we have enough money

Her: but I Lala I can help you

Me: you are not going to be having sex with random strangers for money

Her: but you doing it

Me: I don't have a choice

Her: we always have a choice Lala and you made yours

I was defeated. When did 12 year olds become smart? She stood up and went to our wardrobe

Her: I'll start packing

Me: Ivy this is for your own safety. It's my job to look out for you and make sure that you never go through what I'm going through

Her: and sending me away is you doing that?

Me: its what's best Ivy. I wouldn't want anything to happen to you

Her: what if you trying to protect me is you putting me in harm's way?

Me: Ari would never hurt you. Her family would harm you

Her: you don't know that Yolanda.

Me: come let's help you pack

She just shoved her clothes into her suitcase and then zipped it up.

Her: I'm done we can go

Me: Ivy

Her: we don't want to keep Ariana waiting

Me: your sarcasm is charming. Look I will visit you everyday

Her: why can't we live there together?

Me: because I don't want us to be a burden to Ari's parents. Besides I'm almost done with school and then we can leave together when I go to varsity

Her: you promise?

Me: I promise

We hooked our pinkies together and then sealed it with a kiss on our hands. It's always been our thing from since we were kids. I was busy with my finals and it was November already. I was left with my accounting paper and English paper 3. I skipped a few classes back in primary, I've always been a smart kid. We took out her clothes and then started packing them

nicely and neatly and after that I made us something to eat and then I accompanied her to Ari's home. Ari would be sharing the room with Ivy. We left Ivy inside and spoke outside

Ari: you gonna be able to come practise with us today?

Me: I wish I could but you know how things are

Her: Landa you need to stop this. its madness and it might get you sick

Me: Ari I understand your concerns but I'm left with two more papers and then I promise you we gone

Her: will the money be enough to get away?

Me: it should be

Ari: you know if you need more I got you right?

Me: I know buddy and thank you. Thank you for everything.

Her: give me a hug

We shared a hug and then I walked home passing by the shop. This neighbourhood hottie walked up to me, he's hot yes but he's an arrogant self-centred bastard and I want nothing to do with him. Ok reason why I hate him this much is because growing up he and I were good friends until our prom night when he tried to get into my pants and after having failed he called me the names that everyone else in school had been

calling me. He turned out to be like any other jerk who saw me as nothing but a sex slave.

Him: Yola wait up

Me: Leave me alone Raphael

Him: Yola come on

He said grabbing my arm, I tried pulling it away from him but his grip was tight.

Me: say what you want to say and go

Him: Yola I'm sorry ok. I've been feeling bad about what happened since that day and I hate myself for what I put you through

Me: oh so now I'm not a slut that opens her legs to every man I come across?

Him: I didn't mean it Yola. Can I make it up to you?

Me: Raphael stay away from me. it was bad enough that everyone in school acted some type of way towards me but for you to do the same? That was a low blow even for you. Let go of me

I yanked my arm from him and he let go. Raph is the first man to ever hurt me emotionally after my dad. He and I were tight and he knew everything but not once did he judge me or treat

me some type of way and then all of a sudden he acted like a jerk and from there on I have never gotten close with any guy. I got home and I was welcomed by a bitch slap and who was I to let her go, I returned one to her myself and she held her cheek

Her: I want you out of my house

Me: gladly

Her: and bring my daughter back

Me: why? So you can sell her like you did me? I don't think so "mummy"

She screamed in frustration and stormed off. Where was I going to go? All I had managed to raise was 5K and that wasn't even going to be enough to cover up my fees. I was just praying that I get a bursary when I get to varsity. I got into my room and packed my clothes and took everything that belonged to me and walked out of my home or at least the place I used to call home. I felt a rain drop on my hand. *Could today get any worse?* I started walking and the rain got worse, a car stopped next to me and the person inside rolled down the window and Good God was this man a creature from out of this world. *No man should ever look the way this man did. It was morally wrong!*

Him: can I give you a lift?

I looked at him blankly. Not because I didn't hear him but I was too busy focused on his beautiful self that everything he was saying was falling on deaf ears. I felt someone taking my suitcase and I got a clear view of him. he was in no way human shame. He was an alien and he had a British accent which made him even more sexy. He opened the door for me after having put my dirty suitcase inside his brand new looking car

he was driving the latest Mercedes Benz.

Him: please, get in

I looked at him and my mind came back. *No man ever wants to give you a lift unless he expects something in return. DON'T TRUST HIM Yolanda!* -trust my subconscious to talk to me in the most unexpected situations-

Me: what do you want in return?

Him: excuse me?

Me: no man just ever does something nice without any expectations. So what are yours?

Him: can we have this conversation inside the car. I already have flu and I don't want it to get any worse

He said that shivering. He was wearing a shirt and chinos with nice red bottoms. He looked like someone who had style for days.

Him: if I wanted to steal you or do something to you, I would have already

Me: now how am I supposed to trust you?

Him: I never asked you to trust me to begin with

I was suddenly stunned.

Him: please get in the car

I swallowed my pride and got inside his car and he closed the door and ran into his side and got in. his car was so warm because of the heater. He buckled up my seat belt and then buckled up his and then started the engine. He was listening to G-Eazy's album... if only he knew the crush I have on the guy.

Him: you told me I own that pearl, yeah that's cause I bone you girl. you should be my only girl when I hit it you feel like you own the world. I'm on some.... You listen to G?

Me: huh?

Him: if you uncomfortable with the song you can change it

Me: no its cool. I love G-Eazy

Him: a girl that knows her music. I think I like you already.

I didn't respond

Him: so where am I taking you?

Me: uhhm

Him: uhhh?

Just then his phone rang and he answered it, it was connected via Bluetooth to his car. And on the screen it was written "Munchkin". He answered it.

PC

Him: is mom ok?

The girl just cried Him: I'm on my way

Chapter 4

He ended the call and changed directions.

Me: whoa where are you taking me?

Him: to the hospital

Me: can you at least drop me off first?

Him: do you know who that was? That was my sister. Our mother had an operation today which was a matter of life or death. And as you heard my sister crying on the other side of the line, she's gone

I kept quiet. He was driving so fast I was holding onto my seat even. We got to the hospital and he parked and rushed inside leaving me sitting there. *So what now Lala? You left with a stranger and you far from home or Ari's home. how are you even going to get home now?* –At that moment I wished I could slap my sub because it was asking me questions I couldn't answer. The car wasn't locked and if I took my things and left then chances are thieves might steal his things. Ok what now? his wallet was sitting on the cup holder between the seats, I took it and opened it looking for his id. His name was Tobias Evans and he was 26, funny cause he didn't look it. I took out my phone and it was off, battery had died. I looked for a cable and all I could find was an iPhone cable, the latest one and here I was with an iPhone 4 so I was doomed. After a good 2 hours

he finally walked out with a beautiful skinny woman with midnight blue hair, it was navy-ish and it suited her. they shared a hug and he came to his car and he started the engine.

Him: so where am I dropping you off?

Me: my friend's place on 5th avenue

Him: that's where we come from

Me: yep

Him: why your friend's place and not your home?

Me: got kicked out of home

Him: what did you do?

Me: what's with the 21 questions?

Him: uhhm maybe because I know that a normal parent wouldn't just harbour another woman's child without asking such questions

Me: well you not my parent or my friend's parents

Him: I see why you were kicked out.

Me: excuse me?

Him: we'll start at my place, I need to change and don't worry. It's around here

I didn't even have the strength to argue. We parked in front of the biggest house I had ever seen. It was the type you only saw on magazines or something. We walked out and went inside and the inside was even more beautiful. I sat in the kitchen on the counter chairs. After a while he came back wearing a sweater and sweatpants and carrying clothes in his hands.

Him: I don't know if these will fit but you need to change before you catch a cold. There's a bathroom down the hall on your left

I look at the clothes.

Me: whose are they?

Him: they belong to my late sister

My uniform was partially wet and pride wasn't going to work here so I took the clothes and went to change. It was a tracksuit, navy

Advertisement

velvet with a pair of an all-white airmax. Everything suited me perfectly. I walked out and he was on the phone. He said his goodbyes after noticing me.

Him: I knew these would fit

Me: I'm sorry about your mother

Him: she's in a much better place.

I nodded.

Him: I never got your name

Me: you never asked for it

Him: ok. My name is Tobias Evans and what's yours?

Me: Yolanda Graham

Him: nice to meet you Landa

Me: likewise, Toby

Him: its Tobias.

With that he walked out and held the door for me. I walked out and we drove off to Ari's house. He dropped me off and I took my suitcase with me.

Him: will you be safe here?

Me: of cause

Him: are you sure?

Me: yes, I'm sure.

I got to the door and he was dragging my suitcase for me. said he wanted to make sure that I was safe. I rang the doorbell and then the door swung open. Before me stood the man who took away my innocence. For a minute I thought I was on the wrong

door step but nope, it was the right place because of the interior

Me: what are you doing here?

Him: visiting my sister and nieces and nephews. What are you doing here? And who is this man you with?

I pushed him out of the way and walked in shouting for Ivy's name. she was in the lounge with Ari's mom, Ari and Ari's big brother.

A.mom: hey honey what's with the shouting?

Me: Ivy go fetch your things we leaving

Ari: friend what's going on?

Me: Ivy. NOW!

Ari: Landa you scaring me and Ivy too. what's going on?

Me: why don't you ask your uncle

I was so pissed and even trembling. How did I miss this piece of information? How did I not know that the man who stole my innocence was my best friend's uncle? I walked upstairs to Ari's room and Ivy was sitting on the bed crying

Me: where is your bag?

Ivy: Lala what's going on?

Me: I'll tell you later. Let's just leave

Ari walked in and closed the door and locked it behind her

Her: you not leaving here until you tell me what's going on

Me: Ari I don't have time for this

Ari: you can't just storm into my home and start shouting
Landa. What is it?

Me: it was him ok. your uncle. It was him

Ari: it was him?

Me: he took away my innocence Ariana. I was only 10

I didn't even have any tears in me.

Me: he threatened he would go after my sister if I didn't do it Ri

She shook her head in disbelief

Me: please open the door

She handed me the key while clearly still in shock and I opened the door and let myself out. I was drained in all aspects. When I got downstairs everyone was waiting anxiously to hear the reason for my outburst but I didn't say anything instead outside I found Toby standing outside he's car talking on the phone yet again, he helped us with our bags and we got inside and he drove off in silence. We got to his house and we got off, he took

both our bags and we went in. I asked that Ivy wait in the lounge I wanted to talk to toby.

Him: so this is what's going to happen. I don't know what you going through and I won't ask. A matriculate shouldn't be going through such. so you and your sister are going to live with me until you go off to university ok?

Me: why are you doing this?

Him: would you rather I take you to social services instead?

I shook my head

Him: I'm doing this because I have a good hurt and it's in my nature to help people. Come I'll show you where you guys will be sleeping. He showed us a room with a double bed and had everything in it.

Him: this used to be my sisters room. I haven't had the time to clean it out so I'm hoping you'll make do and then this weekend we can go buy you guys bed covers that are more your style or whatever.

Me: thank you Tobias

Him: now I don't expect much from you either than good results. I have a cleaner who comes in 3 times a day but since there's you guys she'll be here every day. I am hardly ever home because I'm always travelling and my big sister the one at

the hospital comes over every day when I'm not around to feed the dogs. Everything else we will talk it through as we go on.

I just nodded.

Him: will you two be ok here alone? I need to be somewhere

I nodded again

Him: there's food in the cupboard, meat in the freezer and yeah I don't know what else you might need. Oh and there's snacks too. you will familiarize yourself with everything else. Bye Red

With that he walked out. my hair was copper red so hence the red thingy. I went downstairs and joined my little sister

Her: who is he and what are you doing to him for him to be this nice to us?

Me: I met him today after mom kicked me out and he said he doesn't want anything from me

Her: why don't I believe that? Man always want something. they want one thing

Me: I love you Ivy but I'm writing tomorrow morning and I need to practice With that I went to our room and practised until I passed out. I woke up when I felt someone pick me up, I have a fear of heights and that fear includes being picked up too. never been a fan of being in the air or having my feet dangle.

Chapter 5

Me: please put me down

Him: you shivering. Are you cold?

Me: please just put me down

He placed me inside the covers.

Him: are you cold? Are you coming down with the flu?

I shook my head unable to utter a single word. Please understand that when you are afraid of something it does weird stuff to your body and that was me now. My heart was beating out of my chest almost like I was having a panic attack

Him: Red talk to me please

Me: I'm scared of heights

He looked at me for a while and then laughed

Him: whoa you serious? I... I'm sorry I didn't know that

Me: of course you wouldn't know

Him: so that means you are afraid of being picked up? I couldn't let you sleep on the floor now. You were going to catch a cold

Me: thanks for caring

Him: but it wasn't even a height

Me: just being in the air or my feet not touching the ground scars me. it makes me feel like I'm having some sort of a panic attack

Him: that's sad

Me: yeah

Him: so does that mean you can't sit on a high chair?

Me: come on. A chair is a chair.

Him: but you said you don't like your feet not touching the floor

Me: I'm too tired to have this talk with you.

Him: did you guys eat?

It then hit me. I didn't make anything to eat and my little sister was probably hungry AF. OH God I'm the worst sister and she was in bed sleeping already

Me: what time is it?

Him: past 11pm. Wait you guys didn't eat?

Me: it totally slipped my mind. I was too busy studying that I forgot

Him: lucky you I brought pizza. Wake the little one up and come eat

I nodded and he walked out. I woke Ivy up which was a struggle but eventually she woke up and we headed downstairs to eat and get to know each other seeing that we lived together.

Him: I'm an accountant and a partner at some accounting firm

Me: so that means you know your accounting right?

Him: top of my class red

Me: great. If you not busy can we look at few things. I kind of got stuck and that's when I fell asleep cause I couldn't crack it

Him: bring your books and let's do this

I ran upstairs and came back with my books. Ivy finished eating and went straight to bed leaving me with Toby. This guy right here knew what he was doing. He wasn't lying by the top of the class statement because he was really smart and he made it all seem like the simplest thing known to men. We slept at 3am in the morning and I was writing at 9am. I was sure going to pass that paper with the help I got last night or should I say this morning. We got to school and he parked in front of the gate.

Him: I won't be available to pick you two up so I got you a driver, her name is Ashlene... she's my PA. here is cash for lunch for the both of ya'll and I will see you guys later. Red, Ace that exam ok!

I nodded.

Me: thank you Tobias

Him: you welcome. Ivy, see you later

She smiled and then we got off the car and went inside. All eyes were on us. remember I have a rep in this school and me rocking up in a Benz doesn't make things any easier for me. Ari came to me and threw herself at me in a bone crushing hug.

Her: I am so sorry.

Me: its ok

Her: no it's not ok. Mom threw him out. he confessed and mom threw him out. please come back Landa. I tried calling you but your phone was off. Where did you sleep? Are you ok? Oh my God

I pulled her away from me and held her at arm's length.

Me: Ri I'm fine. Ivy is fine. We slept at this guy's house

Her: guy?

Me: not a client or anything like that. I met him yesterday after mom kicked me out and he offered us a place to stay when we left your house

Her: do you trust him though?

Me: he seems trustworthy

Her: that's not an answer. Landa you have been through a lot and for you to trust a stranger this easily

Me: I don't know Ri

there's just something about him that makes the hair on the back of my neck lie down. he seems genuine

Her: whatever you say

"Hey Ladies"

I knew who it was. I can never seem to get his voice out of my head no matter how hard I try

Him: new client? Rocking up in a Mercedes

I turned to slap him with the back of my hand

Me: go fuck yourself Raphael!

I said walking straight to class. I know I live the life of a prostitute or escort or whatever you choose to call it but I'm not that person. I don't do any of the things I did by choice or because I wanted to. I just wanted us to stop going to bed on an empty stomach. You see when your mother brings her friends over and eat with her friends while you are locked up in your room and all you can wake up to the next day is bones of yesterday's meat you can't help but try and find means to change the situation and if mother says this will put food on the table then who are you to act a fool and not take the offer? I

got into class and this bitch who hates me and I hate her walked over to me and pressed her hands on my desk

Her: neighbourhood whore

Me: and you would know right?

Her: I saw the car you pulled up in

Me: yeah and you've pulled up in how many this week alone?

Her: listen here whore

Me: no you listen here slut! Don't try me because we both know it won't end well

Her: let's just hope little Ivy doesn't end up like you

She walked away I gripped her hair and pulled her by it making her scream in agony. You can diss me all you want just don't go anywhere near my sister

Me: could you repeat that, I didn't quite get it

Her: you hurting me

Me: I said repeat that

Her: I'm sorry

Me: what?

Her: I'm sorry

I let go of her and she fixed her hair and cat walked away. You might say I have anger issues but when people are always picking on you on a daily you tend to become that person. It's safe to say I aced that paper because they repeated a question paper Toby and I had found online last night and managed to solve it all. I think I might have gotten a 90-something percent in it. I went to check on Ivy and I found her sitting under a desk in her class crying.

Me: Yvette what's wrong baby?

She shook her head and just cried some more. I didn't know what to make of it because I was hurt but I was also mad at whoever would make my little sister cry.

Me: Ivy talk to me

I said pulling her out under the desk and she finally agreed to come out. we sat on the desk and she wiped her tears

Me: talk to me baby cheeks

Her: it was this other boy from grade 9, he pulled my skirt down on the school grounds

Me: he did what? Show me this boy

She shook her head

Me: Yvette show me this boy now!

I said pulling her hand and we walked to the school grounds and there was a group of boys playing soccer

Me: which one is he?

She pointed at some boy with freckles. I walked up to him and kicked him in the balls while he was busy being a goal keeper

Me: next time I'll do more than just kick you in the balls. If your horny ass so much as look in my little sister's direction ever again I will chop your balls off and hang them on the school front gate. Try me

With that I walked over to my sister leaving him crouching down to the pain. We got outside and a car flickered its light. I was pretty sceptical until a lady walked out and came to us

Her: I'm Ashlene Mr Evans assistant. You two must be Ivy and Red

I couldn't help but laugh. Of course he said to his assistant I was Red. I'm probably the only red head in this school. Trust me it caused a huge fight between me and the principal and I won because I was not about to dye my natural hair colour to something else while they let the blondes and the brunettes be. We got into Ashlene's car and she drove us to Mac D

Her: so what will you ladies be having? And before you say no, I was ordered not to take no for an answer

Me: fine. Fold over meal please and Ivy?

Ivy: I'll have a big mac meal thank you With that she went through the drive thru and ordered our meals and then after that she drove us to Toby's place. We said our good byes and went inside

Chapter 6

The next day I wasn't supposed to go to school but I was called into the office because of yesterday's incident on the school grounds. I sat opposite the principal with my arms folded.

Her: Miss Graham

Me: Head Mistress

Her: We do not tolerate bullying in this school

Me: but you tolerate sexual offenders right?

She looked at me a little shocked by my statement and I wasn't going to take it back. What boy pulls down a girls skirt unless they horny or somewhere in between

Her: sexual offenders?

Me: clearly someone, whoever reported this to you didn't tell you the whole truth. I found my little sister curled up under a desk crying because some stupid ugly boy couldn't keep his hands to himself and figured it'd be better if he pulled down my little sister's skirt. So tell me, was I wrong to fight for my sister because she cant defend herself? If you were in my shoes, would you have done things differently?

Her: I hear you Miss Graham but your little sister should have come to my office and reported the incidence either than you taking matters to your own hands

Me: this is the thing, you were going to give him detention for probably a day and he was probably going to get mad and then he would try to get even with Ivy and do far worse than just pulling down her skirt. and you people weren't going to do anything about it. maybe a suspension note for a week or something and then he's back.

Her: Miss Graham

Me: no head mistress. If my little sister was raped you guys wouldn't do anything about it. Don't try to act like there was something better you could have done. I did what I could to protect my sister. If you wanna punish me then punish me for defending my sister.

She kept quiet

Me: if you not going to punish me or whatever, may I please leave. I'm writing my last paper tomorrow and I need to prepare for that

She just nodded and I walked out like a boss.

Things were good. Results came out and as I predicted I got a distinction in Accounting... not that the rest weren't distinctions but accounting was the highest and Toby was so proud of me he bought me an iPhone 6 and Ivy also got good grades and he bought her an iPad for school purposes. She was only going to start grade 8 next year so she didn't really need a phone. I got

accepted into Auditing and Accounting and Business Management in 3 IVY league universities and I managed to score myself a bursary that would cover EVERYTHING as long as I kept the results coming and would intern at their company during holidays. First 3 months weren't easy but Toby and Ivy called me every day so it felt like I was back home. yes, Toby's place had become a place I call home. He was heaven sent, not once did he try his luck on any of us though I was sceptical about leaving my little sister with just him alone so he suggested she studies in a boarding school and come back when I was back and we were all good with that idea. I don't know how Toby pulled the whole boarding school thing off because some docs needed our parent's signatures and details but guy pulled it off and my sister was in. I didn't want to be far so I opted for the state university. We lived in LA so might as well. Ari was left to study literature at Yale and our other friend went to Seattle to find herself. I haven't seen our mother since the day she kicked us out and frankly I don't care about her. I had just gotten out of my last lecture for the day and was talking to Toby on the phone

PC

Him: so guess what?

Me: What? oh tell me T. tell me now. I cannot bare another moment without knowing!

He laughed and so did I. it's something we picked up from the movie The Secret Life Of Pets

Him: Loneliness

We both just cracked up in laughter. Oh this guy was really something else and I enjoyed every minute I spent talking to him

Him: look outside your window Red

Me: uhm... ok

I got up and peeped through the window and what do you know. his car was standing right outside my building. He waved at me and I chuckled waving back

Me: you didn't tell me you were back

Him: I wanted to surprise you

Me: well you've succeeded

Him: come out here

Me: still tryna find my other shoe. Oh wait, got it

Him: see you now

End of PC

I walked out of my room and locked it then went downstairs. I lived in a flat paid for by my bursary. If you had told me I'd be living like this 7 years ago

I would have told you to shut up because what you are saying is unrealistic and such things don't happen to people like me.

Toby knew my story with my sister and why we left home, he was sympathetic towards and he promised us to never live the way we lived again. I got downstairs and threw myself at him and he picked me up and spun me around. I'm glad to say the whole being picked up thing and spun around didn't give me heart attacks anymore even though being up in the air still scared me. I didn't even hang my clothes on the roof because I feared the worst possible scenario. He put me down

Him: she missed me

Me: she really missed him... whoever we talking about

Him: I thought I was talking about Red

Me: really? Argh you know how Red is, she probably did miss you

Him: and what about Yolanda?

Me: she missed T if T missed her

Him: T always misses her company. T suggests that they go out for a late lunch. What does Red suggest?

Me: Red thinks that's a great idea. she just needs to go put on proper shoes

Him: nah you going to take hours and I'm hungry AF!

Me: wont I embarrass you. I mean I literally look like a student right now

Him: yeah so?

I was wearing gym shorts and a loose school tee with dog sleepers, hair tied up in a messy bun and had glasses on. I normally read Facebook diaries when I get back from school and when T came, I was finishing up one I had been reading from school all the way to my place. I've been here for 3 months and I haven't made any friends yet.

Me: fine

Him: still no friends?

Me: you know me. I like my own company... and yours and Ivy's

Him: how long do you plan on staying a loner?

Me: as long as I'm here

Him: and a boyfriend maybe?

Me: I'll get a boyfriend the day you get a girlfriend

Him: I don't think any woman would be comfortable of the relationship we have

Me: ncoooh that's adorable! Whimp!

He punched me playfully and I stuck my tongue out at him and he just laughed. Toby had become a big brother to us and his big sister Camille or as ya'll know her "Munchkin" was like a big sister to us and she loved us especially Ivy.

Him: ok ok ok. I don't want to bring a bitch at home that will mistreat my little Red riding hood and little miss sunshine

Me: I'm in Varsity and sunshine only comes on holidays. Stop making excuses

Him: ok fine. There is someone I like but she's young and I don't think she feels the same about me as I do her

Me: you'll never know unless you tell her. As for the age, it aint nothing but a number

Him: I aint tryna get arrested for statutory rape now

We both laughed and he suddenly kept quiet and kept his eye on the road.

Him: any Mr. I should know about?

Me: you know what I've been through over the years. A Mr is the last thing on my mind

Him: not all Mr's are like the one's you've had encounters with

Me: oh yeah you right, you one of the good 0.01% remaining

Him: whatever you say. Thanks for the compliment by the way.

Me: so where are we going?

Him: you'll see.

He kept driving and then we stopped outside this big tall building, looked like a hotel really and it looked high class and not for people like me.

Me: are you here to fetch something?

Him: no. this is where we eating

Me: No WAYS! Have you seen how the people entering this place are dressed?

Him: yeah and none of them are dressed like you

Me: exactly why we need to find another place. Like O'Neels or something

Him: Red.

I looked at him

Him: calm down. we just having lunch

Me: but still T

Him: aint like you looking to impress anyone... or are you?

He gave me that look of his and I just hid his face with my hands

Him: tiny hands. Come lets go

He got out of his side and came to open for me. it's become a thing from since the first time we met until now. it's a habit if I can put it that way. We walked in and the hostess looked at him and then me

Him: we'd like a table for two please My arm was hooked into his and I was leaning on his arm because he was slightly taller than me... as in basketball taller type and I was just there looking like his little sister.

Chapter 7

Her: please, follow me.

She led us to a table for two and I was left mocking her and the way she spoke almost as if she was programmed.

Her: your waiter will be here to take your orders

With that she left

Me: Your waiter will be here to take your orders... sounds like Siri

We both cracked up in laughter

Him: don't be silly you'll get us kicked out

Me: what if she has an on and off switch somewhere?

Him: maybe its hidden under her butt cheeks

Me: and she has spent all her life believing that she's actually human

We both looked at each and laughed at how ridiculous we looked and sounded with our makeup stories. We looked through the menu and I couldn't recognise anything, they didn't even have pictures but instead they had prices and everything was expensive. As in \$200 and above and that's only the starters menu. I looked at him and I think he could feel my

eyes on him because he raised his eyes from the menu and looked at me too. he then whispered

Him: what's wrong?

Me: everything is expensive here

Him: yeah so?

We were both whispering

Me: I don't even know what is what

Him: I'll order for you and I promise you going to love it

Me: fine

Him: why are we whispering again?

We were both leaning in on the table whispering. I looked at him and leaned back to my seat laughing and he joined in

Me: I don't know. you started it

Him: didn't want you to embarrass me

Me: the way I'm dressed did that for you already

A waiter came to take our orders and indeed the meal he had ordered for me was AMA-ZING. It was meat platter and it wasn't big enough for two people and I had the meal with a milkshake while he drank a glass of red wine.

After the amazing dinner we had he drove me straight to my place, I felt like I was talking to myself because he was just quiet and nodding to everything I was saying. We got to my place and he parked the car and unlocked the doors and I pressed the lock button.

Him: and then?

Me: I should be saying that to you. What's going on here Tobias?

Him: nothing Red.

Me: I'm not stupid. You've been quiet all the way

Him: its work stuff

Me: Wrong!

Him: then I don't know what you want to hear

Me: Tobias I know I've only known you for a few months but work stress doesn't make you this quiet. Did I do something wrong?

Him: no

Me: then what's wrong Tobias? What's going on?

I was getting impatient here. T is not a moody person and then suddenly he gets all moody on me out of the blue... something had to be bothering him

Him: I don't want to talk about it Red now please

Me: fine.

I unlocked the door and got out banging it. how dare he snaps at me? I get it, I was being pushy but for him to snap at me like that? No fam it doesn't work like that I'm sorry

Him: Yolanda

I didn't respond instead I walked to the building door and he grabbed my arm just as I was about to open the door.

Me: leave me alone

Him: not until I know we good

Me: Tobias remove your hand away from my arm

Him: Red. Tell me we food first

Me: we good now please let go of my arm

Him: now you just saying that

Me: what do you want me to say Tobias huh? What do you want me to say? What do you want from me?

Him: this.

I don't know when his hands got to my face but he pulled me in for a kiss and it was heavenly. I felt butterflies in my stomach, it was nothing like I have felt before. It was like he was erasing all

of the bed experiences I've ever had with kissing and creating a new beautiful memory of what a real kiss is supposed to be like or feel like. It was magical. He broke the kiss and stared into my eyes as I did him. he let go of my face and then left me standing there just like that and he drove off leaving me to replay what had just happened right now. I touched my lips thinking about how soft his lips were against mine, how his tongue danced to a beat of its own against mine, God his breath with a hint of the wine he had drank today. What was this man doing to me? I opened the door and walked up to my room. I used the stairs because I lived on the 5th floor and there weren't many stairs really. I got into my room and just slid down by the door and smiled to myself. WOW! I was disturbed by my phone ringing in my hand, I checked the caller id and it was Ari.

PC

Her: hey honey

Me: hey Ri

Her: how you doing? How's school?

Me: I'm good

Advertisement

school is good. And how are you?

Her: I'm good. Great even

Me: Ri what's going on?

Her: so I met this guy today, he's a tutor we met by chance. I was late for my class and he had just gotten out of his

Me: Ri... get to the end already

She laughed

Her: your impatience is not charming

Me: Ri come on

Her: his name is MJ. His coloured from South Africa

Me: and you gathered all of this while late for class?

She just laughed at me very hard and I couldn't help but laugh too

Her: no. We met again at the canteen after class and we spoke and got to know each other a little more. Except he's older and way out of my league

Me: what do you mean?

Her: he's a Bess. Grandson of the great Damon Bess. He's 22 and I'm only 18

Me: ohh....

Her: yeah I know. I really like him friend

Me: then go for it

Her: argh I'll see. So what's going on with you?

Me: nothing.

Her: how quick you were to answer. What's going on?

Me: Tobias kissed me and I didn't stop him

She screamed making me remove the phone from my ear. She was so loud!

Her: when?

Me: about 10min ago

Her: and? I knew it!

Me: huh?

Her: I always knew he likes you I just didn't think he'd make a move

Me: huh?

Her: you really clueless huh

Me: Ari

Her: you'll be fine. So where do you two stand now?

Me: I don't know. it will make things awkward and schools are closing soon

Her: talk to the guy and find out

Me: no! I won't be the one to raise it when he was the one that kissed me

Her: yes and you the very same one that didn't stop him

Me: bye Ri

Her: don't be bitter. You just had your first kiss, embrace it

Me: Ri bye, there's someone at the door

Her: fine. Bye babe

End of PC

I got up and went to get the door and before stood the most handsome guy I have ever laid eyes on after Tobias of course. I usually see him in our building and on campus, he's a rugby player with the whole package and stuff going on. He is just a beautiful man.

Him: Hi

Me: uhm hello

Him: so there's a party this coming Friday, it will be held at the frat house. I'd love it if you would come through

He said handing me a flyer

Him: before you say no please think carefully of your no and consider the following. If you get bored I'll bring you back, if

you need to go to the loo I'll go with you and if ever you need anything I will be there to cater to your every need

I looked at him thinking about his offer but I was a little sceptical, pretty boys are normally players and I'm not ready to get played in my first year. I've heard what happens in these frat parties and I don't want to be a statistic.

Me: I'm sorry but I don't drink let alone party

Him: what do you drink and I will make sure it's available. I will even go and buy it for you if they don't have it

Me: why are you acting nice Mr Rugby captain

Him: so you know me?

Me: I normally watch you guys play when I don't have anything better to do

Him: and?

Me: you good

Him: of cause I am. The name is Misokuhle and what's the beautiful lady's name?

Me: Yolanda

Chapter 8

We were still standing by my door with him standing on the other side of it. My word his voice was so deep and so bold and held so much authority. Makes you wonder who gives birth to such creation? Men like the one standing before shouldn't even exist. They are temptation. I'm pretty sure a lot of girls have lost their virginities to him because of his looks, his body and his voice. I know I would

Him: pretty name for a pretty girl

I'm not big on guys that try to flirt with me. I'd prefer things just happen naturally because I don't know how to flirt or whatsoever so he just ruined the moment for me.

Me: does it ever work?

Him: what?

Me: the line you just used on me? how many girls have you gotten in your bed with it?

Him: you would be surprised what status and good looks can get you

Me: yeah... I'll pass

Him: Yolanda look, if I wanted to get you into bed trust me I would have already but you wouldn't be able to handle a nigga

like me. I'm only here because my friend is too chicken to come to you himself

My jaw was probably on the floor. Actually it was... figuratively. I didn't expect such arrogance and attitude considering he is the one that came to me and not the other way round. I get it he's the rugby captain and all but seriously?

Him: my number is on there should you decide to live a little

With that he walked away. My first thought was to throw the stupid flyer in the bin and that's exactly what I did. How dare he? I went to make myself something to eat and then got on my social media and there was nothing from Toby. He and I talk day and night and for him to just go MIA on me. this was bad and I wasn't going to talk to him about it until he comes forward. The next day I woke up with zero messages from him yet again and then did everything and went to campus. After class I went to sit in the canteen to wait for my next class, I felt someone sit next to me. My routine in school is to go to class and wait on my next class while reading my favourite Facebook diary and then back to class and then home. I don't have friends

Voice: hey.

I turned and she smelt good and was a pretty face too.

Me: hey

Her: my name is Mia; you are?

Me: Yolanda

Her: nice to meet you. Love your jacket... where can I get one like it?

I was wearing Toby's bomber jacket which I took and he knows it's with me. he's had it since his basketballing days in varsity. I don't get how he graduated top of his class while still playing a sport that made him travel...

Me: I won't lie to you I didn't buy it, got it from a friend

Her: it's really nice. So what course are you studying and which year?

Me: I'm studying accounting, doing my first year. You?

Her: I'm doing Business Management and I'm also doing my first year. How come you always sitting alone?

Me: I don't have any friends

Her: well then it's about time that changed. Consider me your first friend

I chuckled

Me: ok first friend. Nice to meet you

It was Thursday and I was in the library discussion room pressing my phone and listening to music... I'm supposed to be

doing an assignment but I'm finished with it and I'm bored. Mia and I were friends I guess and I had met her other two friends, Michelle and Alexis and they were sweet people I guess. I haven't heard anything from Toby which is not so strange anymore considering what happened. I'm slowly getting used to not talking to him daily even though I miss him so much and I think I'm miserable going this long without talking to him. someone tapped my shoulder and I looked up removing one earphone and it was Michelle.

Her: hey babe

She said taking a seat next to me

Me: hey how are you?

Her: I'm good thanks and you?

Me: also good

Her: so theres this party at the Frat house tomorrow

Me: I know

Her: great then. Lets go shop for outfits!

Me: I didn't say I was going

Her: come on Yola. You have to go, first party of the semester and its going to be dope. Its like a meet and greet

Me: I don't drink and I'm not used to this whole night life thingy

Her: I also don't drink but I'm going. Come on Yola it will be fun

I kept quiet contemplating

Her: please

She made puppy eyes and I smiled

Her: great. You wont regret it!

She said packing up my things for me. I just laughed at how excited she was. We walked out of the library and we headed to the parking lot where her car was parked

she and Mia had cars... rich kids with rich parents. Turns out Mia's mom owns O'Neels and her father is a king which makes her a princess. We got into her car and Mia was the one driving it. We went to town and parked at a mall and went inside. As we were walking we bumped into Miso and his crew, Michelle ran to him and threw herself in his arms and he caught her and spun her around

Mia: you'd swear they didn't just see each other on campus a few minutes ago

Me: they an item?

Alex: yep. They met last year December and they've been busy since

Miso's crew was just a bunch of hotties. They were 5. The guys greeted and we greeted back.

Mia: guys this is our new member Yolanda, Yola this is my brother Michael, this is Miso something like a brother to me, this is Ashton, Shane and Kenny. They all in the school rugby team

Them: nice to meet you

Shane: so how does it work? You just chose the prettiest girls on campus and form a squad?

He had an accent. He wasn't English that's for sure. Mia laughed

Mia: you could say that. Your friends need to compliment you

Kenny: I see. Well then Yola welcome to the squad

I was a little confused. Did this mean that they were all friends? Miso and Michelle were in a world of their own you would swear we didn't even exist

Mike: so what are you guys doing here anyway?

Lexi: to shop for outfits for tomorrow's party

Miso: and she's coming?

He said pointing at me

Michelle: you'd be surprised what my cute puppy eyes can achieve

Miso: you don't have to tell me. I'm a fool for them

I was so annoyed

Ashton: I look forward to seeing you there lady

Me: sure

Mia: ok bye guys. Miso leave my friend alone please

Miso: you really need a boyfriend already

Mike: when she's out of varsity

Mia: bye boys.

We left the guys and drove off to Ashanti's, a high class restaurant owned by Mia's mom. We had lunch and the Miso and Mike came to join us and turns out Mia and Mike will miss tomorrow's party because theres some royal whatever that they have to attend. I wasn't going to go without Mia shame and I was yet to tell the rest of the squad. I feel so grown because now I have a squad. She and I drove together seeing that we lived in the same building.

Her: mom doesn't get that we young and we have plans

Me: I'm sorry friend

Her: it just pisses me off that we always have to drop our plans last minute just so we can entertain some royal families without real lives. My word their kids are so fake bruh. The people they force us to mingle with

I just laughed. Mia is a fun spirit so to witness her being mad or pissed is funny.

Me: you'll be fine friend. You wont die

Her: sometimes I wish I could switch lives you know I just nodded. I wouldn't know let alone understand rich people problems considering where I come from so no. I don't know. Mia and I were in her place with her packing her new clothes in her closet. Her place looked fit enough for a princess. She had lots of pictures in her room and a big collage board on the wall. I was looking at the beautiful collage and looks like she, her brother and Miso go way back because there baby pictures of the three of them

Chapter 9

So from what I gathered, Miso is older by a few months than Michael and then Michael is a year older than Mia... well more like some months older but you know how guys are with age and all. Mia and I were the same age.

Me: who's this with your mom?

Her: that's aunt Yaya, Miso's mom and on the other picture that's her and Miso's dad uncle Derrick

Me: mmh nice

Her: can I tell you something? but you need to promise not to utter a word to any of the girls about this ok

Me: uhm ok

Her: promise first.

Me: fine I promise

Her: Miso was the one who asked me to go to the party tomorrow. He and my brother live next door by the way. The guy cant stop talking about you. He was the one who even convinced me to befriend you. I know its evil of me but I needed to know this girl that's got my brother's heart in her hands. I'm sorry

I kept quiet. So if Miso wasn't interested in me then I would still be a loner? Great! Way to go. Why did I even think that someone like me would be friends with a princess to begin with?

Her: Yola please say something

Me: I should go.

I went to take my bag and headed for the door but she stood in front of me before I could open the door.

Her: I know you mad and you have every reason to be but me approaching you was genuine Yola.

Me: please move Mia

Her: please say you forgive me first

Me: what kind of friend are you? You know your brother is dating your best friend and then you go on and befriend the girl he seems to probably be distracted by. Who does that Mia?

Her: Michelle and Miso aren't dating.

Me: what?

Her: they just screw but that's as far as it goes with the two of them. Michelle's boyfriend is in Harvard and she is here

Me: so what? Mia just move

Her: please just here me out and I'll get out of your way I promise

She looked at me with pleading eyes and I fell for them and she pulled me to sit on the couch.

Her: Michelle and Miso did meet last year and they decided on just screwing, they didn't know they were going to study in the same varsity until they ran into each other this year. Miso saw you around here and he's been trying to gather balls to approach you but he's always chickened out until that day. He asked Michelle to act as his girlfriend just so he could get you jealous or see where you stand with the whole him and Michelle thing. The guy really likes you Yola and he would really love to see you at the party tomorrow

Me: can I leave now?

Her: fine

I got up and went out and got in the lift

Voice: hold the lift please

I pressed the button to open the door and Miso walked in and stood next to me

Him: Miss Graham

I kept quiet and didn't respond

Him: ok and then?

I slapped him. don't ask why, I also don't know why I would slap him. I guess I was pissed at what Mia told me and I just needed to hit something or in his case, someone.

Him: What the fuck?!

He said holding his cheek.

Me: Mia told me

Him: yeah so?

Me: you such a jerk!

He stopped the lift and then caged me by putting his hands on either side of my body trapping me. He was starring at me in the eyes. I was breathing in the air he was letting out, his breath smelt of fresh mint and his cologne was doing wonders to my body.

Him: from the first time I met you I have never been able to stop thinking about you Yolanda. I've seen you with that guy that's normally here to see you with the black car and I don't care what relation you have with him but I will stop at nothing until you my girl and mine alone!

I chuckled sarcastically and bit my lower lip

Me: move.

Him: no!

Me: Misokushle move out of my way

Him: I love the way you say my name by the way. its cute

He smiled to the side sending impulses down to my spine. What was going on with me?

Him: God the things I would do to you if you were mine

Me: than thank God I'll never be... yours

Him: I don't mind chasing you the whole year until you all mine.

He stepped away from me and clicked on the lift and it started working again. I kept quiet all the way and so did he. It stopped on my floor and I got off instantly and headed to my door. I opened the door and locked it then went to put my things in their place and threw myself on the bed. What the hell was that? I was woken up by my phone

Advertisement

on the screen popped up Toby's name.

PC

Him: Hey Red

Me: hi Tobias

Him: I'm outside, could you come out?

Normally I wouldn't mind him just rocking up like he did now but now I suddenly minded. I felt like he was abusing his power. We get it he does everything for me but to just rock up unannounced is wrong.

Me: fine I'm on my way

End PC

I didn't even wait for him to say anything further. I wore my slippers and a jacket because it was a little windy and then headed out. I spotted his car and walked over to it and got in the passengers side.

Him: you look good

Me: thanks. You too

Him: uhhm Red I'm going to South Africa and I'll be back after a month

Me: oh

Him: Ashlene will be fetching you when schools close and Munchkin will stay with you guys until I'm back

Me: when you back schools would have opened

Him: I know so I'll come visit you here

Me: ok

Him: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine

Him: you sure?

Me: yep. Actually no. Tobias why did you kiss me?

Him: It was a mistake

Me: fuck that!

Him: I don't know what else you want to hear

Me: the truth. You kiss me and then go MIA on me

Him: what do you want me to say Yolanda? That I'm madly in love with you? Is that what you want to hear? That if I pursued a relationship with you it would ruin everything we have going on now and that I'd be arrested for statutory rape

I kept quiet trying to swallow what Tobias had just told me. This is the thing with Tobias telling me how he feels about me, it came unexpected, yes Ri told me but at still I had accepted in my mind that he and I would never be and then all of a sudden he comes and confuses me making me feel some type of way. I was screwed. And then theres Miso, he's everything yum but he's an asshole and he thinks he can toy with me just like that. Theres something about Miso that makes you want to explore while with Tobias he is just an angel and I know him so it wouldn't be such a bad idea either than the age thing.

Me: travel safely Tobias

I opened the door and walked back to the building. If I don't know, I was confused. This is what happens when you've never dated in your life and then comes two guys and you just left there confused and unknowing what to do. I got to my room and called my little sister. We talk everyday anyway.

PC

Her: hey sisi

Me: hey sunshine

Her: that name is limited to its owner

Me: yeah whatever Ivy. How are you?

Her: good sis and how are you?

Me: I'm ok

Her: whats that tone I'm hearing? Whats wrong?

Me: nothing. I just miss my little sister that's all

Her: just one more week and I'm home

Me: Tobias is leaving for a month

Her: yeah he told me yesterday

Me: am I always the last one to know about these things?

Her: we figured you'd be the most difficult one here so yeah

Me: right... of cause you did

Her: he told me about you two kissing

Me: of cause he did

Her: he really likes you Lala

Me: I don't know Ivy. It would ruin everything

Her: so what? You rather live this way than be with him?

Me: its wrong. He's 10 years older than me

Her: age aint nothing but a number

Me: don't say that!

Her: you clearly like him. go for it and stop playing around. Hes a good man sis

Me: I know.

Her: I have to go. Study time

Me: I love you

Her: I love you more. Bye

Me: bye

End PC

I just slept thinking about what my little sister was suggesting. I dialled his number which I knew by heart

Chapter 10

He answered after a while

PC

Him: Red is everything ok?

Me: T I want to see you.

Him: uhhm ok. I'm on my way

Me: thanks.

End Pc

I went to freshen up, that being showering and getting all cleaned up and then wore a dress and my sleepers... shoot me! they comfy ok! I waited for his call, my heart was racing out of my chest beating abnormally even. My hands were all sweaty and I was suddenly very nervous and also scared. My phone rang in my hand I almost dropped it, it was him. I didn't answer and just walked out and used the stairs hoping that they would calm me down. I got in his car and fastened my belt.

Him: you wanted to see me

Me: please can we go home

Him: uhhm ok. is everything ok Red?

Me: yes. Please just drive us home

Him: ok.

We drove home and when we parked in the yard there was another car parked right next to his spot. It wasn't a car I knew and he seemed just as confused. We both got out

Me: expecting someone?

Him: no.

We walked towards the door and there stood a woman I have never seen not even on his phone or social media but good God she was a model. She had to be. She was beautiful and sexy in ways I didn't think existed. Her hair was brunette and she was very slender with a flat tummy and big boobs and ass. She was an hour glass.

Her: Toby

Oh so she gets to call him Toby and I'm not allowed... mh. She pulled him in for a hug and he responded. For some reason I was jealous. Why was I jealous? She could be an old friend-or an old fling- and there goes my subconscious. He broke the hug.

Him: Mary-Ann what are you doing here?

Her: what kind of question is that? I came to see you silly. I was in town and I figured I just have to see you. Uhhm who's the little girl?

I chuckled sarcastically. Maybe it's the shoes that make her think I'm a little girl

Him: this is uhm... Re.. I mean Yolanda. Yolanda this is Mary-Ann

Her: his girlfriend

I nodded.

Me: nice to meet you. T please drive me to my flat, I have this assignment I need to finish and its due tonight at 12am

Him: uhm

Mary: just request her an uber. You and I have a lot of catching up to do babe.

Him: uhm Mary here are the keys and I'll be back ok

Her: but babe

Him: you rocked up unannounced. I can't just cancel my plans for you

So now I'm a plan. I went from being Red in a split second to being Yolanda and now I'm his plans... great one. She unlocked the door and walked in.

Me: I'm sure you don't want to keep your girlfriend waiting "Toby". I'll request an uber as she suggested

I said walking away and he grabbed my arm

Him: what's the matter Yolanda

Me: so now I'm no longer Red... great

Him: stop acting childish and just say whatever it is you want to say

Me: I don't want to say anything Tobias. Now please, I have an assignment to finish

Him: well then let me take you back to your place

Me: I'll get a cab

Him: dammit you can be so difficult. Just get in the damn car Yolanda.

I kept quiet and walked to the car, he opened the door for me and closed it and then got in his side and then we drove off in silence. We got to my building and he parked across the street.

Him: you asked me to come over for a reason

Me: yeah and I've forgotten that reason

Him: how convenient that you forget when Mary-Ann says she's my girlfriend.

Me: bye Tobias

I tried opening the door but it was locked

Him: Ann is my ex, she and I broke up beginning last year when her modelling career took off and I suddenly didn't fit her image anymore and so she moved to Milan with her new actor boyfriend and I was left to pick up the pieces. She gave me my ring back and that was the end of us. I don't know what she's doing back here

I still didn't respond. I felt sorry for him but at the same time I didn't show it because I was a little too jealous of pretty much everything and that woman made me feel little in my own home and he didn't do anything about it.

Me: please open this door

Him: fine.

He unlocked the door and I got out and went back to my building. On my way upstairs I bumped into Miso. You have got to be kidding me! I was running up the stairs that I tripped on one and fell right into his arms.

Him: didn't your parents teach you never to run up the stairs

He was still holding me. We were so close to each other we would think we just shared the greatest kiss of all times and were now just lost in each other's eyes

Me: uhm thanks for catching me. you can let go now

Him: you look beautiful. I thought you didn't go out at night

Me: I just came back from a walk

Him: I see. Are you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine

Him: you crying. Talk to me Buttercup

I kept quiet. Should I or should I not? what if he... argh neh I don't know him well enough to tell him about myself.

Him: come I'll make you tea.

We walked to the lift and he pressed the 9th button. I looked at him and he didn't say anything instead he pressed on his phone and a while later it rang

PC

Him: mom

....

Him: I'll be there tomorrow after class

....

Him: something came up and I can't come now

....

Him: I know Yaya and I will make it up to you

....

Him: I love you more Yaya. Bye now

End of PC

The elevator stopped and he pulled my hand to his flat. It was clean

Advertisement

the kitchen was clean for a guy... a rugby guy to be exact.

Him: welcome to the man cave. Haven't really had some time to tidy up much

I looked around and all I'm thinking is "What does he mean?". This place was cleaner than my place. He's probably a neat freak that's all.

Him: please make yourself comfortable

I sat on the high chair and rested my arms on the kitchen counter and he went to the stove and started preparing my tea.

Him: should I add marshmallows in your hot chocolate or?

Me: no marshmallows thanks

Him: al righty then.

When he was done he led the way to the lounge and he had a big flat screen tv on the wall. There were a lot of pictures around here. Some of him and some girl, some of him and his mom I'm assuming and some of Michael and his family and like

Mia there was a big frame with a collage of pictures with the heading "Family Is Power", a quote from The Originals said by Elijah Mikaelson to Niklaus. We both sat down on the couch and he handed me my cup and I took a sip. It was the best I had ever tasted.

Him: mom always says I put a lot of sugar, I hope it's not too sweet

Me: it's perfect actually

Him: thank you Buttercup. So want to tell me why you were upset earlier?

I thought for a minute

Him: If it's your boyfriend I won't judge or say shiit to diss him. I promise

Me: I'm just overreacting over nothing and Tobias is not my boyfriend. He's just someone I live with

Him: ok. What did he do?

Me: I'm just being dramatic that's all

Him: I'm sure you not. he must have done something for you to be that upset

Me: it's nothing

Him: its ok if you don't want to talk. What time is your class tomorrow?

Me: at 10... why?

Him: perfect. Let's watch a movie, your choice

I gave him a look

Him: what?

Me: what are you up to?

Him: nothing. you don't want to talk and I won't force you too. so rather than just sitting in awkward silence lets watch movies. Which movie do you want to watch, please don't pick The Vow

Me: why not it?

Him: because mom and Melody are suckers for that movie. I don't know how many times they've made me watch it and they cry every time.

Me: that's the one I want to watch

Him: can I suggest a comedy instead? It's still girly

Me: but I want a cute sappy love story

Him: fine. Your pick anyway

He connected his laptop to the tv and played the vow. It's a beautiful movie about a woman and her husband, they get into

an accident which causes the woman to have amnesia whereby she doesn't remember her life after she met her husband. It's cute and also sad. By the time it was finish I was in tears.

Him: please don't tell me you crying

I was laying on his chest with him on the couch. I sniffed

Me: no I'm not crying

Him: you were crying. You such a girl

Me: shut up!

Him: make me

I looked at him and looked at me and he lifted up my chin and pulled me closer still not breaking eye contact and he moved his pink lips closer to mine

Chapter 11

I was so lost in his beautiful plump lips that I even forgot about my feelings for Tobias. This was wrong yet it felt so right and so damn good. It was slow and unrushed and just perfect, it was like he just wanted to savour my lips and just own them for as long as he can as though he was never going to kiss them again. I could feel myself getting wet down there and I could feel his manhood growing. He broke it and looked at me with his now small seductive eyes and removed hair from my face.

Him: have you ever watched The Other Woman?

I shook my head no. Wait why was he pretending like we didn't just have the greatest kiss known to humanity? Why wasn't he talking about it? Why do guys do this to me? am I cursed? Can I not kiss? It has to be that. I probably suck at this whole kissing thing.

Him: nah you might cry again in between. Let's watch something else instead. How's uKnowing? It's a nice movie

Me: I don't know it

Him: perfect. You going to enjoy it

Me: and if I don't?

Him: then we'll watch something you like.

He played knowing and I went back to my comfortable position and just watched the movie. It was an interested movie and like he said, I was enjoying it until we were disturbed by his phone ringing.

Him: sorry for one second

PC

Him: Yanga

Yanga: yheyi wena ndimdala kunawe (hey you I'm older than you)

Him: only by four years. Ufunani?

Yanga: what? Uhleli ne cherry apho? (you sitting with a girl there?)

Him: yah. Thetha ufunani? (yes, speak what do you want?)

Yanga: checka

u-Mama unenye iwei ngomso and itaima alizubakho and you the only one there so ke please go (mom has this thing tomorrow and dad won't be around)

Him: ninjalo ke nina! Uphi kanti uKyle no Aya? (this is how you guys are. Where's Kyle and Aya)

Yanga: Kyle is at work. Aya's classes end late. you the only one. Please just go support mom dude

Him: fine. It's not like I have a choice anyway.

Yanga: I owe you one

Him: what time do I need to be there?

Yanga: it's around 8 I think. One of her children has to be there seeing that dad won't make it

Him: fine.

Yanga: thanks little man

End of PC

Yanga ended the call before he could even respond. He pressed play

Me: everything ok?

Him: sort of. I have to make a quick phone call

PC

Him: Ma

Her: hey baby what's up?

Him: why am I getting a call from Yanga and not you?

Her: about?

Him: lawei yakho ingomso (this thing of yours that's tomorrow)

Her: I didn't ask Yanga to call you. I figured I was going to ask you tomorrow when I see you

Him: a little heads up maybe

Her: I'm sorry. I know how much you hate these things. That's why I didn't ask you to accompany me in the first place

Him: fine. I'm bringing someone thou

Her: that's fine by me as long as she's pretty

Him: bye Mafaku

Her: bye baby. 7pm sharp

End of PC

Since I was laying on his chest I could hear everything from the other side of the line. His phone was that loud... or maybe its because I was on his chest so yeah.

Him: how do you feel about attending an art exhibition meet and greet sort of thing?

Me: huh?

He paused the tv.

Him: tomorrow there's an art thingy or whatever around 7pm. Please come with me

Me: uhm I don't know

Him: please say yes. I can't go there alone and my siblings all can't make it and it's important to mom that one of us be there with her

Me: you want me to meet your mother?

Him: if you want to meet her then sure thing you can meet her while we there

Me: I... uhhm

Him: no need to worry about what to wear. I'll have it covered

Me: but I promised the girls I'd go to the frat party with them tomorrow

Him: yeah well then unpromise. They won't mind

Me: it doesn't work like that.

Him: I'm sure you'll have more fun at the centre than at some frat party. Besides, Mike and I won't even be there.

Me: I wasn't going there for you guys

Him: either way, we the life of the party and without us it will be boring AF. Please just come with me. At least there you'll be with Mia

Me: I'm still mad at Mia

Him: please be mad at me instead. She only did it for me

Me: yeah you right

Him: please call her and tell her you forgive her that way she'll stop being mad at me

Me: no. you deserve it!

Him: at least you not mad at me so it's a win

I took the remote and pressed play. After the movie I got up and asked him to accompany me to my room and he did just that. We got to the door and I opened

Him: thanks for trusting me today

Me: I didn't say I trust you

Him: you came to my apartment and you stayed and watched movies with me alone. That's trust

Me: whatever. Bye Miso

Him: bye Buttercup

He kissed my cheek and walked to the elevator. I closed the door and just melted. I could still smell him on my dress. These people that wear expensive colognes. I went to bed and slept instantly without even checking my phone. The following day I woke up with a dozen missed calls from Toby and some from Ri and Mia. Mia even sent me countless texts apologising and so did Toby. I went from being the school whore to being a girl

that guys beg to be with... how did that happen? I called Ri and told her everything and like me she was suddenly confused. I didn't want to tell my sister because she is set on Toby and will probably discourage whatever I might think I have with Miso. I didn't see him on campus... I wonder where he was. After class I walked home and on my way a car stopped next to me and the person got out. it was only then that I realized it was Miso. He was driving a black two door Jaguar and he had cut his "Chance the rapper" afro. He cut it into a brush cut and it only made him look even hotter.

Him: hop in

Me: you cut your hair

Him: yep and your hair is hanging loose today

I hit him playfully and we both laughed. I got inside and he closed the door for me and went to get in his side and drove off.

Me: and the hair cut?

Him: well such things one needs to clean up pretty well. Don't wanna embarrass the family and taunt their name

Me: your family must be a big shot

Him: being a Bess is a blessing and a curse

Me: did you just say you're a Bess?

Him: yeah. I thought you'd know by now

Me: I live under a rock. Sorry. What relation do you have to MJ Bess?

Him: he's my brother... how do you know him if you don't know me?

Me: he's a tutor at Yale?

Him: yeah... how do you know my brother again?

Me: a friend of mine studies there and they bumped into each other the other day

Him: oh...

Me: yeah. You just passed our building, where to?

Him: to Beverly hills to find the perfect dress for you Buttercup.

I rolled my eyes

Me: who said I didn't have a dress?

Him: I'm sure you do but a girl can never have too many dresses now... at least that's what mom says

Me: you're a mama's boy huh?

Him: don't you love your mom?

Me: uhm so where are we getting this dress?

Him: I don't know. we'll check everywhere until we find you something perfect.

Me: sure thing.

On the way we were listening to the album Bad Hair by Nasty C... or so Miso says. He's a South African artist and he drops bars for days. I'm not big on hip hop as per say but I do appreciate good music and that's Bad hair... Good music. He was rapping along and he was good

Me: you rap?

Him: nah

Me: then what do you call what you doing?

Him: karaoke!

I chuckled and let him be. He was actually not such a bad guy after all. I misjudged him. let's hope he won't change after some time.

Chapter 12

After the art expo Miso and I have hung out a lot and it's been amazing every time. We haven't kissed again since that day. His mother is an amazing kind woman and she is goals. She's so young for a person with 4 kids and here is my mother with just two and she looks like she's in her 50's. Toby and I's relationship was never the same after the Mary-Ann saga. He and I were strictly friends and I made it clear to him that we were better off with the relationship we had in the beginning and he said cool. Schools were now closed for June and truth be told I missed seeing Miso and the rest of the squad. Funny how things changed in just a little period of time. Ari invited me over to her house, ever since the incident with her uncle he never set foot at Ari's home again. Tobias was sitting in the lounge busy clicking on his computer.

Me: hey

Him: hi

Me: do you have a minute?

Him: yeah sure

Me: Ariana asked me to visit her for the holidays

Him: oh

Me: so can I go?

Him: yeah sure. Wont Ivy be hurt though? Coming home with you gone?

Me: I already spoke to her and she said she and Munchkin were going on vaca together

Him: oh... she didn't say anything to me

Me: uhhmm...

Him: I'll drive you

Me: you don't have to. my friend is picking me up

He shifted his eyes from the screen and looked at me behind his reading glasses

Him: Ariana has a car now?

Me: not Ariana. Miso...

Him: and who is she? I've never heard you talking about her

Me: it's a he

Him: so he's your boyfriend?

Me: we just live in the same building that's all

He nodded and his eyes went back to his computer screen. I walked out with my tail between my legs and went to my room and called Miso telling him I was done with pretty much everything. Well not really but my things were already packed

and I was ready to go. He called telling me he was outside. He knew where I lived, he's the one that brought me here for Easter holidays. I went to say my goodbyes to Tobias

Him: isn't your friend coming in?

Me: uhhm

Him: the least you could do is to let him in so that I know who you left with

Me: I'll call him then

I dragged my suitcase and went to put it in his car after a tight squeeze

Him: He what?

Me: yep he wants to meet you

Him: ok cool

I walked in first and he followed behind me. Tobias was standing in the kitchen drinking water.

Me: T meet Misokushle Bess, Miso meet Tobias Evans

I could never pronounce his name properly and he was ok with it. his name is Xhosa and I can't speak the language let alone pronounce its names and its complicated 'qs' but despite all of that he makes the lingo sound sexy. He was teaching me how to speak it and I won't lie it's been hard.

T: as in Derrick Bess's son?

Miso: yeah his last born

T: I last saw you when you were a kid. I do your father's companies accounting... don't know if that makes sense

They both laughed. I just stood there watching them go on like good old friends. Why am I not surprised they know each other? Miso knows everybody. He's the great son of Derrick Bess and Yandiswa Gxaba Bess.

Miso: Dad is good and mom's good too

T: you should hala

Miso: will do. Uhhm we should get going, don't want to arrive at the crib at night

T: and your mom hates people driving at night

Miso: it's like you know her

T: she once scolded me for not wanting to spend the night at her house after your dad and I finished late

Miso: yep that's her alright

T: take care of my kid young Bess

Miso: always. Bye Toby

Me: bye

T: bye guys. Call me when you get there

Me: will do

I felt like a child going on a date. We got to the car Miso drove off

Him: dad won't believe this when I tell him

I just kept quiet and listened to his playlist. I was never told that South Africans make such good music.

Him: listen to this

“Ek'seni. Sthandwa sami ng'phendule ungbambi ungang yeki ngakho lonke lo thando sthandwa angitshontsheli. Koze k'phumi ilanga ekseni..... thando lwakho lungi thathe lana, lungi beke lana

Advertisement

langi susa lana, langi beka lana oh lufike ngasa thembi ukuthi ngiyobe ng'thand umuntu....” He was singing along to the song and I won't lie as much as I didn't understand what he was saying it felt good hearing him sing all that. There was something about him and the way he sang the words like he was declaring his love to me or something

Him: you don't even know what it means

He said laughing

Me: yeah shoot me. some of us weren't lucky enough to have interracial parents

Him: my dad is a coloured and mom is pure Xhosa... they not really interracial if you think about it

I looked at him super confused

Him: my father is 50% Xhosa and 50% White... he is the interracial one

Me: however, you put it. either way you a mixed race!

Him: weeeh whatever white girl. so aren't you worried you might bump into your mom while you there?

I kept quiet trying to think what the atmosphere would be like if I bumped into her. That woman put me through hell sometimes I even thought she wasn't my mother.

Him: you ok?

Me: just trying to think about what it would be like. When I left she wanted to sell my sister for sex so I don't know

Him: I know you don't want to talk about this but do you think you'd ever forgive her?

Me: NO!

Him: how quick you were to say no. She's still your mother despite everything that happened. You need to forgive her to clear your conscience

Me: she doesn't deserve my forgiveness Miso

Him: I hear you Buttercup but sometimes we don't forgive people for them but we do it for ourselves so that we can remove some of the dead weight we carry around. It's not healthy.

Me: A mother doesn't hit her child when she comes back from school empty handed. A mother doesn't prostitute her child for her own benefits and a mother notices when their child is not the same anymore and not rejoice when her child comes home with money she doesn't know where it came from. That woman was not a mother to me and she will never get my forgiveness

Him: I'm sorry you went through that

Me: all I've ever wanted was to go back to the family we once were. I thought that maybe what she was making me do was going to restore what we had as a family before dad lost his job and she lost hers. I thought that maybe in the long run she would go back to the mother she used to be but instead she became worse. Tried to convince me to quit school because

according to her all I needed was my looks in order to survive in this world and what's in between my legs

He wiped the tear that managed to escape on the side of my eye. I didn't even realise I was crying. I was so angry that my heart was even beating faster than it normally does. He stopped the car and then opened my door for me and pulled me out and pulled me into his arms.

Him: everything we go through, be it good or bad is for a reason. We don't necessarily have to know what the reason is but it happens for a reason and one day we come out of those situations stronger. Our hardships are not meant to break us but they are meant to make us stronger than we are. Ok

He said kissing the top of my head. I could feel myself calming down slowly. I never knew Miso was this kind of person and I am glad I actually let him into my life. I got out of his chest

Me: thank you

Him: what are friends for?

I smiled and he gave me that charming smile of his. We got inside and continued driving until we reached my place. Nothing about this place had changed at all. He parked in front of Ari's house.

Him: whenever you need anything, call me. While you here you should go visit her, just check up on her that's all I'm asking of you

I shook my head

Him: please buttercup. She's your mother

I looked at him and he was pleading me with his eyes. I nodded and he smiled and kissed me on my forehead. We got out and you know how small neighbourhood people get when they see an expensive car around the neighbourhood. We took my bag and he accompanied me to the door. Said he needed to make sure that I wasn't lying... as if I've lied to him before. Ari opened the door and jumped for me in a bone crushing hug you would have sworn she hadn't seen me in decades.

Her: I've missed you. We have a lot to talk about!

She broke the hug and looked behind me

Her: who is he?

She said whispering and I just laughed because he could hear her

Him: Misokuhle Bess.

Me: she's the girl that told me about MJ. Ariana meet Miso

She flushed with embarrassment and Miso just chuckled

Miso: nice to meet you Ari

Ari: like wise. Please come in We walked in and I took my bag to her room and left them talking. the house was empty. I walked back down and found them laughing.

Chapter 13

Him: don't worry your secret is safe with me

Me: secret

Ari: you like news. Miso don't tell her

Me: tell me what?

Him: nothing. Buttercup walk me out. Ari it was nice meeting you

Ari: like wise

They shared a hug and then I walked Miso out to his car

Him: so I'm going to South Africa for like a week or two

Me: oh...

Him: My grandfather is not feeling well and it's not looking good at all

Me: I'm sorry to hear that

Him: he'll pull through. He always does

Me: I'll be praying for him

Him: that's sweet of you Buttercup. I'm sure he'll recover after you've prayed for him

We both laughed. He wasn't ok but he was acting all cool not to alarm me. I pulled him in for a hug and then let go.

Me: you ok?

Him: I'll be fine

Me: you know you don't fool me right

Him: I know but I'll be fine. Nuni is a fighter

Me: that he is

Him: so I will see you when I get back ok?

Me: of cause

Him: tell whatever boy that tries to get close to you that I will break their balls

I laughed and so did he.

Him: enjoy your holidays buttercup. I'm meeting my sister for lunch

Me: ok have fun and tell her I said hi

He just laughed at me

Him: she will murder you

Me: I know. bye Miso

Him: bye

He pulled me in for a hug and then he got in his car after kissing me on my forehead and drove off. His sister doesn't like me and I don't get why and honestly I don't care. His mom adores me or she's kind and caring towards me so I don't get why Aya acts all weird towards me. I was about to walk to the yard when my "mother" Ester made her way to me. nothing about her had changed at all.

Her: so you came back to your senses and came back?

I just looked at her thinking about what Miso had said about forgiving her and I thought against it. she doesn't deserve me forgiving her

Her: so whose money are you eating now?

Me: I don't have time for this

I turned and she grabbed my arm

Me: let go of me

Her: come back home with my daughter

Me: what daughter?

Her: what do you mean what daughter. I need my children back home Yolanda

Me: you don't have any children Ester

Her: this dick you riding must be that good for you to disrespect your own mother like that. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't even know how to ride dick so don't mess with me little girl. I expect you home by the end of today

Me: or what?

She chuckled.

Her: you see that little boarding school you think you've hidden Yvette from me by taking her there, I know where it is and I am her mother and they will let me take her when I go there

Me: you bluffing

Her: call my bluff sweet cheeks

She let go of my arm

Her: come back home and I'll let Ivy be. She's happy and she's prettier now... so are you

Me: what do you want from me?

Her: what do you think?

She walked away and I walked inside and just sat down cried. Why won't this woman leave me alone? Haven't I given her enough? I was disturbed by my phone ringing and it was T.

PC

Him: Red

I sniffed

Him: Red talk to me. what's wrong?

I didn't respond instead I just cried

Him: Red where are you? I'm coming.

Me: I'm at Ari's house

Him: I'm on my way

End of PC

Just then after the call Ariana walked in and she immediately came to kneel in front of me and hugged me. I hated feeling this vulnerable and helpless.

Her: friend talk to me

Me: I don't know what to do anymore Ri

Her: friend what's going on? Is it Miso? Did he do something?

I shook my head

Me: its Ester

Her: what does she want? What did she do?

Me: I jus.... I... I don't know

Her: Landa please talk to me

Just then there was a knock on the door

Voice: Red its T

Ari let go of me and I moved from the door and she opened. The minute he laid eyes on me he pulled me to his chest and just let me cry some more. Where would I be without this guy though? After a while of me crying he removed me from his chest and wiped the remaining tears from my eyes and looked at me waiting for me to talk

Me: Ester knows where Ivy's boarding school is and she's threatening to fetch her if I don't go back to her before the end of today

Him: what exactly does this woman want from you?

I shrugged. I really didn't know what she wanted from me. she had everything but she still wanted to prostitute me. well she looked like she had everything

Him: come let's go to your house

I shook my head

Him: Red. Let's go

I wanted to fight but I was going to lose the battle so we walked and I showed him where we lived and when we got inside it was still the same just that some other things were missing in the kitchen. She walked out from the lounge into the kitchen while smoking.

Her: so you came

T: Hello Mrs Graham

Her: hi, can I help you?

T: I am Re... Yolanda's friend

Her: oh so you the one she got all these fancy clothes from huh

Him: Mrs Graham name your amount

Her: excuse me

Me: What?

Him: name your amount. What amount of money will it take for you to leave Yolanda and Yvette alone?

She laughed but T kept a straight face.

Her: you think you can buy my kids? It doesn't work like that son

Him: I know you have a price at the back of your head right now. Tell me what it will take for you to stay far away from Red and sunshine

Her: is that what you call them? Mmh must be nice

Him: I don't have all day

Her: no amount of money will make me hand over my daughters to you

Him: if you cared about your daughters you wouldn't be threatening their lives

Her: show yourself out. Lala I expect you home before 9

T took out his wallet and leaned on the kitchen counter.

Him: will a 100k cover it

Her eyes widened and she swallowed really hard. I looked at T

I was not some business transaction

Her: mmmh so you moneyed

Him: just financially stable. So?

Her: 150

Him: let's make it 200 and you never go anywhere near the two of them ever again

Her: deal. You got yourself a good man here kid

I kept quiet while T signed the cheque and then handed it to her. the smile on her face was one I had never seen before. She offered T and I something to eat or drink but T refused and as we were about to leave she stopped us... well me

Her: wait

She walked to the lounge and left us standing there by the door. She came back after a while with a box.

Her: this was left by your father, for you and your sister. I don't know where the key is. I searched high and low and even tried to get it open by those people on the street but nothing worked

I nodded and took the box and walked with T to Ri's place. I was mad at Ester and also mad at T for treating me like a transaction.

Him: you upset

Me: do you blame me?

Him: I was only trying to help

Me: by buying me Tobias? She is still my mother and you just made me feel the same way she used to make me feel when those men paid to be with me

Him: Red I'm sorry. I didn't mean for it to seem that way

Me: of cause you didn't. Humans are not for sale Tobias! You cannot put a price on a human being, that's prostitution

I was really mad at him and what he did back there. He was supposed to be the knight in shining armour but instead here he is acting like one of my mothers clients paying her enough money just so I can be with him or so that even if I think of leaving him I should think twice because he paid 200k for Ivy and I or maybe I'm overthinking all of this and he was just being nice.

Him: Red what do you want?

I didn't know how to respond to that question

Him: What exactly do you want Red?

How was I supposed to respond to that question?

Him: You got jealous over Mary-Ann and let that come between us. Now you call me crying and when I try to help you attack me. What is it that you want Red because I don't know anymore

He said raising his hands up in defeat.

Him: when you figure it out, you know where to find me.

With that he walked to his car and got in then drove off leaving me dumbstruck. After all that session of whatever. I got inside with my father's box and went straight up to Ari's room and locked myself in her bathroom. The box didn't need a key as per say. When my little sister started school dad gave her and I matching necklaces and I've never taken mine off since. I wore it all the time because despite everything he was once a great father and he went to the ends of the world to make ends meet for his family.

Chapter 14

I took off my necklace and tried to open the box but I needed my little sisters one too in order to be able to open it. I was curious as to what was inside the box because whatever it was it had to be private or personal for the only keys to be mine and Ivy's necklaces. I called Ivy and she told me that she left her necklace when she left for boarding school because she didn't want to be reminded of where she came from. Ivy was always shielded by me, be it she broke something or whatever bad thing she did as a kid I made sure to shield her and take the blame because seeing her cry was heart breaking so rather me than her. I walked out and put the box in my suitcase and then went to find Ari. She was sitting in the lounge watching tv, I threw myself next to her

Her: talk to me

Me: I think my mother sold Ivy and I to Tobias for 200k

She turned to look at me but my eyes were on the tv I could feel her eyes piercing right through my skin.

Her: I'm sorry. What?

Me: Tobias wrote Ester a \$200k cheque

Her: what? Why?

Me: Ester threatened to find Ivy and take her so I got here and called Tobias and he came and took me to Esters house where they made a deal that she leaves alone for \$200k

Her: wow!

Me: I know

Her: where does he get so much money?

Me: he's an accountant and also a partner at some firm. He knows the Besses personally so I wouldn't be surprised he owns a piece of their company

Her: but to have 200k lying around just like that

Me: yeah I know

Her: wow.

Me: enough with the wows. So what were you and Miso talking about?

Her: nothing that concerns you

Me: you my friend. You can't be discussing me with boys

Her: it had a little less to do with you actually

Me: Ariana

Her: you not going to drop this are you?

Me: not a chance.

Her: we were talking about his brother MJ

Me: yeah what about him?

Her: that I like him but he's very intimidating and the age thing is strictly a no and yeah that's all

Me: come let's stalk him on Facebook.

Her: what? No!

Me: come on let's check the guy out.

We went on my iPhone and searched for MJ on Facebook and his account didn't give much away about him. He didn't post much and his bio didn't give out much either. All he had was his profile picture which clearly indicates how many people know him based on the likes of the picture

Me: add him

Her: yeah... right

Me: it's the only way we'll get to know more about him. Add him

Her: fine.

She took her phone and sent MJ a friend request and we waited patiently while stalking Miso. Miso mostly had pictures of his family and his squad. He was so hot in his pictures and the comments left by girls on his pictures proved just how hot

he was. His profile picture was a picture of him and his mother and I won't lie it was a cute picture you would swear she was his girlfriend

Her: who's she?

Me: his mom. Amazing woman

Her: how come she looks this young?

Me: that's cause she is young

Her: how old is she?

Me: she was 28 when she had Miso... you do the math

We kept scrolling until my phone rang and it was Miso. The way I jumped I almost fell and Ri laughed at me and so did I. I answered the call while holding back laughter

PC

Him: hey Buttercup

Me: hey prof

Him: prof?

Me: if I'm going to have a name from the powerpuff girls then you might as well have one too or would you prefer mojo something

Him: uhhh....

Me: I thought as much

Him: but buttercup is cute

Me: so I should give you a cute name too?

Him: please!

Me: how's Oh?

Him: from Home? NO thank you stick to Miso

Me: so how's lunch with Aya?

Him: we just boarded the Bess PJ actually

Me: aaah rich people... goals fam!

Him: of all the things you could refer to me as you chose fam?

Are you tryna family zone me?

Me: of cause not. So it's you and Aya?

Him: It's me and all of my siblings. The PJ started with them and then came to fetch Aya and I. Kyle and MJ say hi

Me: uhhm hi

Him: relax. They mean well even though they making fun of me

Me: why?

Him: they saying how dare I be just friends with you...

Me: it's simple... you not like every normal guy out there

He chuckled

Him: Buttercup I'll call you when I land ok?

Me: in two days right?

Him: yep. Don't miss me much

Me: I won't if you wont

Him: bye Buttercup

Me: bye Bubbles

End of PC

I ended the call before he could complain about how bubbles was too girly. I know Miso and he was going to call me right back in 5, 4... my phone rang and I laughed while answering

PC

Him: Bubbles?

Me: you didn't want Prof

Him: Bubbles buttercup?

Me: ok how's muffin?

Him: I love muffins yes but not enough to be called by them. Be original

Me: Bubbles is original thou

Him: fine I'll allow you but if I ever hear anyone call me that I will murder you

Me: so that means I can't call you bubbles around the squad?

Him: exactly

Me: fine

Him: bye

Me: safe travels Bubbles

He just laughed and we ended the call

End of PC

Things at Ari's home have been great. I was having fun and I haven't seen much of Ester ever since that day. I guess the 200k was doing the things that needed to be done. She was probably happy and eating it however. It's been a week since I last spoke to Miso and he hasn't been answering my calls let alone responding to my texts and I was now worried. I was talking to Toby on the phone. Ever since he met Miso things between he and I were somewhat back to normal. We were sitting in his car listening to Toni Braxton's album Pulse.

Him: have you spoken to Miso?

Me: no he hasn't returned any of my calls

Him: his grandfather didn't make it

I clasped my mouth with both hands. It would make sense why he wasn't available on social media. He must be crushed. He once let me in on how tight he and his grandfather were and this one time we called the old man together and he was a sweet and funny old guy so for him to die must have really hit him hard. His grandfather has been sick for some time now, something about water in his lungs. When we spoke to him he was supposed to be recovering well. The day before Miso left he was telling us about how ready he was to go home back to his wife and do what adults do. He was excited too.

Me: when?

Him: Sunday

Sunday is the day Miso was supposed to arrive in SA. It was Thursday now

Me: and when is the funeral? Can we go? Miso is my friend

Him: yeah sure. We leave tomorrow morning ok

Me: let me go say my goodbyes so I can some sleep at home

Him: ok Red I walked to the house and told them that there was an emergency at home and that I would be back next week or so I also didn't know. I took my things and went to sleep over at Toby's house. I sent Miso a text telling him I know about his grandfather and I am sorry for his loss and stuff and then went to bed early. I know I didn't know Damon Bess but from the

little times we spoke we were planning on me going to SA this December and him finally meeting his newly founded wife... it was funny cause that's what he called me and his wife would always play around and say that I'm the only side chick she would accept. They were happy people so I can only imagine what Mrs Bess is going through. I called Mia and she said she thought I knew seeing how close I was with Miso and that she was going to SA tomorrow later on with her family.

Chapter 15

First time in South Africa. I won't lie it's a beautiful place to be in, so chaotic, so noisy and just an amazing atmosphere to be in. It was very much different from what I'm used to but I ain't complaining. We were driving in this beautiful neighbourhood with double stories and triple stories. It was a beautiful place no doubt even changed that mentality of SA being nothing but a forest and people wearing animal skin and stuff. Toby parked in front of this beautiful huge mansion, I thought his house was huge but this place takes the cake. We did struggle to get in because of the press outside their yard but eventually we got in, the press has no shame! They just lost the head of the family and the stupid press is ouchea making this a show. We got out of the car and I was wearing a long black dress, Mia said to wear such because it's a sign of respect and she told me not to show a lot of skin so I was wearing a cardigan over my dress and flat sandals, the funeral was tomorrow and Mia was arriving tonight(Saturday). We walked in and it was chaotic like a house that was going to have funeral tomorrow. We bumped into Miso's mum.

Her: Tobias, Buttercup

She hugged Toby and then moved on to welcome me with a hug. Even with the events she still managed to smile. She had a

doek covering her head and she was wearing a long skirt and even with that she looked beautiful.

Her: how are you? Can I get you guys anything?

Me: We good Mah and how are you?

Her: we hanging in there. Uhhm Miso is out with his father and brother's buying a few things for tomorrow so you'll probably see him later. Let me get these to someone and then I'll take you to mom

She handed the plates to one of the people working around and then she took us to the lounge and Mrs Bess snr was sitting on a mattress wearing all black. We greeted and then Toby left me with her.

Me: Ma

Her: it's so good to see you babe

Me: how are you holding up?

Her: better than the last few days. I guess I made peace with it when I watched him go in and out of hospital. I'm just grateful that he's not in pain anymore

Me: oh Mah I'm so sorry. I only found out Thursday

Her: its ok baby. You here and it's so nice to finally meet you even under these circumstances

Me: it's good to meet you too

Her: Miso will be so happy to see you, at least having you here will lift him up a little. He's taking this harder than the rest of his siblings

Me: mmmh I hear you Mah

Her: anyway you can go and be with people your age

I chuckled, there weren't many people my age around here

Me: we both know there aren't people my age around here. I'll go help Yaya instead

Advertisement

will you be fine?

Her: I'll be fine the day I'm able to get off of this mattress

I chuckled

Me: still can't sit and do nothing huh

She chuckled and then the chuckle turned into tears which she quickly wiped. I didn't know what to say or do at this very moment.

Me: Boobie

Her: I will be fine child. Go help Yaya she needs help

I nodded and kissed her cheek and walked out to the lounge. Yaya told me that this was Amahle and Damon's house. It was a beautiful house. She introduced me around to her friends, Anita, Ledi and her sisters in law Asemahle and Iyana.

Ase: it's so nice to finally meet my nephews crush

I flushed and covered my eyes and they all laughed. We were chilling in the dining room. They had caterers to take care of everything so there wasn't much to do really. Aya walked in and sat down next to her mother and rested her head on her shoulder

Aya: why are you here?

Yaya: Hayi Ayandiswa!

Me: its ok Mrs Bess.

Ase: ok and then why the drama Yaya?

Aya: I don't like her that's all

Ledi: why kido?

Me: I would also like to know

Aya: she's a gold digger that's all

I chuckled in disbelief

Yaya: oh wow

Nita: you dramatic yazi wena

Ase: Anyway I like you and that's all that matters

I chuckled. How can someone like her come from such a loving family?

Me: and I like you too

Yaya: not more than you like me right?

Ledi: think carefully about your answer she might be your mother in law

Aya: my brother would never marry you

She rolled her eyes at me

Me: of cause I like you more Mom

I said that to spite Aya and she was indeed spited. God it felt good. I really don't get why she would think I'm a gold digger because I don't ask Miso for anything!

Ase: I'm going to get you. You'll see

Just then Mia and her family walked in and greeted us all. At least people I am familiar with and I know like me, Mia and her family were with Michelle and Ashton.

Ash: So Mrs B Where's Miso at?

Yaya: he's with his father and siblings in town buying fruit and drinks for tomorrow. They should be back already

She said dialling on her phone and walking out. We sat around the table and we all had a conversation and it was fun.

Normally people don't laugh this loud and chat this much on the day before a funeral but I guess it's because they had everything covered for tomorrow. The guys, Mia and I went to chill outside in the tent and left the old people to chill together. We were just chatting about random stuff, Mrs Bess called me to go and fetch snacks for us. The car parked in front of the house as I was going out to give the guys the snacks and Miso walked out and our eyes met, we shared a moment without any of us saying anything to the other.

Yaya: I'll take these to your friends

I nodded and walked towards the car and threw my arms around Miso's neck and he squeezed my waist

Him: when did you get here?

Me: A few hours ago

Him: thank you for coming

I nodded while still in his arms

Voice: you two love birds can do whatever ya'll doing when we done unpacking the groceries

We broke the hug and chuckled only to realise the voice was that of MJ. He came to me and hugged me

Him: you even prettier in person Buttercup

I flushed

Me: thank you... Mj right?

Him: its Yanga

Miso: Mj will do. This is Kyle and that over there is my father

Kyle and I shook hands and then I shook Mr Bess's hand and then helped out with the groceries with the rest of the guys from school. When we were done Miso joined us and we all sat together and he was actually better than how I expected him to be.

Miso: I'm really worried about Boobie; she was the one who watched him take his last breath

I gasped. That must really be a traumatic thing to go through. Watching your husband die right in front of your eyes. It must be painful.

Mia: Boobie is a strong woman. She will pull through though she might need some counselling after

Miso: yeah we suggested that she gets counselling but she refuses. You know she had to be injected for the shock. It was bad

He brushed my hand over my thigh, it wasn't uncomfortable at all. He looked at me and mouthed "Thank You" and I nodded with an assuring smile. I offered to take the dishes to the house and Miso offered to help me. When we walked into the house together Ase smiled

Ase: Koti ke mahn

I looked at her really confused

Miso: Koti means wife don't mind aunty Melody

Iya: we just proud that we have a daughter in law that's all. At least one of you boys know what girls are for unlike your brothers

I laughed and left them talking. I walked back and they were still going back and forth about Miso and I. I wonder why they are so convinced we dating

Ledi: you doing good honey. Miso sure has taste

Him: o...k. I'm out of here

He went to the kitchen and I excused myself and went back to our friends. These old women sure made fun about everything. they fun to be around. We chilled and just had a great chat. The

next day Mr Bess had a dignified funeral and Miso came back with super red eyes from crying, he went into this other room and his mom was following him and she told me to please go and check on him. I followed him and got inside the room and the bathroom door was locked. I knocked

Me: Bubbles it's me He kept quiet and then a while later he opened and I just pulled him to my arms. It was painful seeing him in that state, I just wished I could take the pain away. He broke the hug and looked at me in the eyes and I looked at him and he brought his lips closer to mine

Chapter 16

He pinned me on the door while his hands squeezed my ass tightly making me feel an exhilaration I'm not used to, some sort of a foreign concept to me, something I have never felt before. He was so gentle with me he made me feel safe and what we were doing felt right and nothing wrong with it at all. He needed this, he needed to forget the pain he was feeling even if it was for a few minutes. He picked me up and he opened the door with the other hand not breaking the moment at all. Normally I'd wonder where he got the strength but then the guy was a rugby player so of course he had strength for days. I stopped kissing him and he looked at me

Me: the door

He walked to the door and locked it and came back to me loosening his tie

Him: you sure?

I nodded and he kissed me laying me back and then his hand went inside my underwear and he started rubbing my nookie, it felt so good to have Miso like this. seeing a side of him I always imagined rough and nothing this gentle. I always saw him as the rough sex kind of guy and not this sweet patient cautious man on top of me. he went on to kiss my neck making me super wet down there. I think we've just found my weak spot. I was weak

for him and I wanted him inside of me, I was pleading to have him inside of me making me experience something I've only ever thought was painful and disgusting and turn it into a pleasurable experience for me. He stuck a finger and I flinched, he looked at me

Him: should I stop?

I shook my head no. I wanted this. he continued to kiss me and then he moved his finger in and out, at first it was a little uncomfortable but it turned into pleasure

Advertisement

his free hand was on my boobs stroking them. God he was taking me to another place where only he and I existed and I wanted us to stay in that world just he and I. He took off his pants as I could feel an orgasm build up. He went down on me and flickered his tongue around my clit, I heard a paper wrap and then he came up to me and tried inserting himself inside of me and I flinched in pain while he was kissing me looking deep into my eyes. I always thought rugby players weren't that packed based on what I've heard, apparently the steroids they take make it shrink but Miso was a different rugby player I guess because he struggled, I was even ready to tell him to stop but eventually he was in but not all in. he started off slowly until he was all in and I won't lie he was pretty lengthy. He went in and out slowly like someone who was making love to me. I'm

used to guys going fast just so they can cum and get off and that's it but Miso was taking his time with me and kissing me every now and then until I came and he came after me. he looked at me like he was studying me.

Him: I love you Buttercup

I kept quiet. Did he just say he loved me? he got off me and went to dispose of the condom and he came back with a Luke warm towel and he wiped me and then I wore my underwear and fixed my dress and the rest of myself and then walked out leaving him to clean himself up. Miso and I just had sex and it wasn't traumatic at all and after that he told me he loved me... that sounds about everything that just happened right? as I was walking I bumped into his mom

Her: how is he?

Me: he's better

Her: ok that's good babe. Thank you Buttercup for being here today and supporting him and the rest of the family

Me: Miso is my friend

She nodded and kissed my forehead and went the opposite direction as me, I was about to walk down the stairs when Aya bumped me on purpose. I really don't know what Miss Bess's problem with me is.

Me: Because I respect your brother and your parents, I'll let this go

Her: I always knew you were ratchet. You will NEVER be part of this family. You may have my brother and the rest of my family fooled with your perfect little attitude but you don't fool me. I can see right through you missy

Me: ok

I said shrugging. I don't know what response she was expecting from me, she walked away pissed and I just let her be. I went to get myself a plate and ran into Toby.

Him: Hey

Me: hey... so when are we leaving?

Him: in about 2 hours so eat up and go pack

Me: sure thing

Him: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm good

Him: you sure?

Me: of cause

He nodded almost like he was doubting my response. Don't tell me it's written on my forehead that I just had sex? I cannot afford to have that. Oh God I'm going straight to hell. Who has

sex under a dead man's house? FLIP! I walked to find my friends and I found them sitting in the tent chatting. I sat next to Mia and just then Miso sat next to Mike.

Mia: so where were you?

I could feel Miso's gaze on me as I swallowed the food I was chewing on

Me: I was talking to my little sister. just checking up on her that's all

Mia: I really need to meet this person you spend so much time talking to

I nodded and shoved a spoonful of rice in my mouth. I wasn't ready for the 3rd degree from Mia. I won't lie it was somewhat awkward between Miso and I, we would steal glances at each other and then when we catch the other looking we would look elsewhere. How was this going to work out again?

Mia: I have to ask

Miso: every time you say that I always get a panic attack

We all just laughed because really Mia is an inquisitive person and she doesn't stop with the questions ey.

Mia: I wasn't going to ask you. I was going to ask Yola

Me: ok shoot.

Mia: since you and Tobias aren't dating... do you think that you and Miso would ever date? I mean like you two would make a cute couple and all

Miso chuckled while Mia's brother laughed. I chocked on my food and they all laughed at me really hard. Mia has a way of just putting you on the spot.

Me: uhhhm...

Miso: Mia get a man already

Mike: over my dead body. So Yola answer... Would you?

I looked at Miso and he shrugged. I needed him to come up with a topic or something or distract them... anything really.

Voice: something has come up at work so we going to have to leave now

Thank God. I thought to myself

Me: oh ok let me finish here and I'll go fetch my things

Toby: please hurry

Mia: we can always bring her back it's no big deal

Me: Its fine Mia, I left Ariana's home when I was supposed to spend the week with her

Miso: see you back in Carli then

He got up with his half empty plate and walked away. I took my plate to the kitchen and then went to pack my stuff in the room I was sleeping in last night. I packed up everything in my bag and as I was about to finish the door opened and his cologne filled the whole room before I even turned to see his handsome self

Him: Buttercup

Me: Bubbles

Him: travel safely neh. I'll see you in a week

Me: I thought you'd stay longer

Him: Nuni was the reason I was going to stay longer but since he's gone

Me: and what about Boobie? Wont she be crushed?

Him: it makes no difference really because as of the next few days they'll be cleaning up his stuff and all and I don't wanna be there to witness that

Me: Miso

Him: nah Buttercup this is my decision

Me: at least see a therapist

Him: only if you'll see one too

Me: huh?

Him: see a shrink. Buttercup you need this

Me: Miso I'm fine

Him: buttercup you still hurting. You still traumatized by what you went through

Me: Miso please

Him: if you don't see a therapist then I'm not seeing one too

I kept quiet and he turned me around and kissed my forehead and walked away. I sighed deeply and watched as the door closed. I finished up packing and then took my stuff downstairs and went to say my goodbyes to Boobie

Her: don't be a stranger now

Me: I will always call to check up on you

Her: call me where? You don't even have my number

Me: then I'll get it from Miso

Her: and if you don't call I will come drag you out of class with that red hair of yours and beat you up

I laughed and so did she

Me: you too old to be beating me up Boobie

Her: call me old one more time child.

I laughed and pulled her in for a long hug. God it felt so good to be in her arms

Her: Miso told me

I literally froze. What???

Chapter 17

I looked at Boobie blankly and she gave me a faint smile. What did her grandson tell her?

Me: Miso told you what?

Her: what could my grandson possibly tell me Buttercup?

I just shrugged. Her and her grandchildren are super tight. Actually this whole family is super close you would swear they tell each other EVERYTHING so I wouldn't be surprised if she meant Miso and I having sex a few hours ago.

Me: I don't want to lie to you I have no idea

Her: have a safe trip child. We will talk proper when I'm in Carli

I looked at her blankly and she just pulled me in for a hug and then she let go of me and kissed me on my cheek and said her goodbyes. I walked away super confused. Miso and I needed to talk when I land because now we won't get the chance to talk. I said my goodbyes to everyone and then we drove to the airport in silence. My mind was elsewhere and I think Toby's was too.

Toby: Red!

Me: huh?

Him: you wanna get something?

He was parked at the garage. Yep I had a lot on my mind for me not to even feel the car stopping and seems like Toby had been talking to me but I was too out of it to even hear him. I was thinking about what Boobie said and the amazing session I had with Miso earlier on

Me: just water and gum please

Him: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine. I just miss Ivy that's all

Him: call her so long. I miss her too

Me: yeah will do

He got out of the car and went to buy and left me dialling Ivy's number.

PC

Me: hey sisi

Her: hey you. How are you?

Me: I'm good babe and how are you?

Her: I'm ok. miss me much?

Me: like you have no idea just how much

Her: I miss you too. How was the funeral? How's your friend?

Me: the funeral was dignified. It was beautiful and how they all spoke of him he was a respected well known man

Her: I can imagine, and your new boyfriend?

Me: new boyfriend?

Her: yeah. Miso-something

Me: he is not my boyfriend. He's my friend

Her: whatever

Me: Miso is fine. He's hanging in there

Her: bring me something nice. Something South African

I just laughed and Toby walked in while I was laughing at her. What did she mean something South African?

Me: what's South African?

Her: I don't know. anything really. A souvenir

Me: ask T to bring you that

Her: give him the phone then

I put the phone on loud speaker and they greeted each other and spoke a lot we were now headed to the airport

Her: T

Him: yes.

Her: Who's Mary-Ann and what was she doing at home that night?

Him: why am I not surprised that you would know about that?

I shrugged. Of cause I told my sister about Mary-Ann

Her: answer me T

Him: Mary-Ann is the woman that broke my heart Sunshine

Her: I'm sorry she did but if she broke your heart shouldn't you like hate her and stuff instead of giving her the key to your house?

He looked at me with a questioning look and I shrugged yet again

Him: what else did Red tell you?

Her: that Mary treated her like crap and you let her

Him: I did let Mary do anything to Red

Her: so Red is a liar now?

Him: I'm not saying she's lying

Her: T

Him: yes Sunshine?

Her: you like like my sister don't you?

Him: even I....

Her: just answer the question T. you like like Red don't you?

Him: yes I do

Her: then why are you letting your ex get in the way? I mean she's in the past and that's where she should stay. She left you for a reason didn't she? If you really did like Red, then you wouldn't have entertained her to begin with

Him: how old are you again?

Her: don't change the subject. I Munchkin and I were discussing you guys by the way. it's pretty clear where you stand with each other and I think you two should go ahead and be together

I just kept quiet starring out of the window because I know my little sister and she won't let it go. Its best they have this conversation together and not with me. My mind was on Miso. I don't know why I suddenly felt the way I did about him but it changed the way I felt about T. My feelings for T got mixed up the minute he paid 200K for my sister and I like it was nothing. I appreciate him trying to save us but I just feel some type of way about the way things were handled. I felt like some transaction and meaningless. Miso has never not once made me feel that way, yes he tries to spoil me when given the chance and he treats me like my age while T treats me like he's little sister and

is just over protective of me and always ready to protect me and keep me out of whatever he thinks might harm me. it's cute yes, but it gets boring. We all want someone who excites and allows us to take risks without worrying about the possibilities. Miso and I have done a lot of what people call "White people" adventures, like skiing, skydiving, mountain climbing and all those other fun activities while T felt like they weren't safe for me to do and all that. Miso challenges me, he doesn't treat me like someone who knows what I've been. He treats me like any normal human being. With Miso I even forget what I've been through and just live while with T it's just different. Even the way I dress is an issue with T, sometimes he doesn't say it but his look always says a lot. I had zoned out that I was shaken by T to remind me that we were still on the phone with my sister

Her: I love you Lala

Me: I love you more

Her: safe trip and come visit when you back ok?

Me: will mos def do

Her: bye

Me: bye

End Of PC

I switched my Bluetooth on and connected it to T's car and played my playlist without even asking. I was allowed. You ever sing to a song you don't understand a single word but sing anyway because it's nice? That was me right now to Berita's Nguwe Wedwa. A song Miso once played for me and didn't bother explaining what it meant and told me that when I was old enough I would understand the meaning of it. It's a nice song

Advertisement

slow jam. Sounds like a love song.

Me: Nguwe wedwa, nguwe wedwa. Ilitha lentliziyo yam. Nguwe wedwa, nguwe wedwa. Awuzange wandikholhlisa. Nguwe wedwa, nguwe wedwa. Endimthandayo. Nguwe wedwa, nguwe wedwa. Awuzange wandilibazisa. Sthandwa sami, thatha nalu'thando lwami lolwakho....

Him: since when do you listen to SA music?

Me: Miso introduced. They make nice music

Him: and you singing along?

Me: love the song

Him: do you even understand it?

Me: you sing the whole of despacito and I don't ask you such

Him: you and Miso have grown pretty close

Me: yeah we have.

He parked the car and I got of same time. I was not about to have this conversation with him. I knew what was going to happen next and I was going to get a lecture about whatever. I took my purse and pulled my luggage and he followed behind me to go and return the car while I waited on the chairs pressing on my phone with my earphones on. I was listening to this Berita song and just then a text from Miso, it read “Nguwe Wedwa!!!” almost like he knew I was listening to it. I giggled alone and responded “Nguwe Wedwa.” And he sent a smiley face making me smile alone.

Voice: ready to go?

I looked up and Toby was standing in front of me. I nodded and we went to board the plane and I sat comfortably and sunk in my seat looking out the window.

I was now back in Carli and T was at work and I was at Ari’s place and she and I were sitting outside on the porch eating chips chatting. I was telling her about what happened at the funeral.

Her: so how do you feel about him now?

Me: I don't know. I don't wanna use the whole I love you thingy all because of the good sex. What if the feelings I have for him are because of the sex?

She laughed

Her: and what if they not? I mean friend I think you feel something for Toby yes but in a way that you feel like you owe it to him because he rescued you from hell. Miso makes you happier than Toby does. I would know cause I am your friend and the way you talk about them says it all

Me: how do I talk about them?

Her: you always excited at the mention of Miso's name while with Toby it's like "oh yeah, he's the best friend ever" even though you don't really say it but you get my point. All I'm saying is that would it be so wrong if you and Miso pursued a relationship? You talk day and night and you always texting and just happy. Give the guy a chance and if it doesn't work out then it wasn't meant to work out

Me: I'll see friend

Ester... the woman that gave birth to me walked over to us. If this woman didn't have the same hair colour as me and my sister, I swear to God I'd say she wasn't my mom.

Chapter 18

Her: When was the last time you spoke to Yvette

Me: excuse me?

Her: when was the last time you spoke to sunshine? That's what he calls her right?

Me: what do you want?

Her: I want that box. I know the key is with one of you

Me: then what's Ivy got to do with it?

Her: my daughter has everything to do with it considering she has the other half of that ridiculous necklace you wearing

Me: what's so special about that box? Isn't the money that Toby gave you enough?

Her: I just need that box ok.

Me: no

She chuckled

Her: keep being this stubborn and your sister might just go missing. I need that box Yolanda

Me: why would she go missing?

Her: stop asking questions for once and just do!

She snapped and I just looked at her blankly knowing very well that inside I was boiling. This woman will be the death of my little sister and I, I swear!

Me: No

Her: tell little Ivy to watch her back then.

With that she walked away leaving me and Ari stunned. Well I was more pissed than stunned. Who did this woman think she is? I want to call her bluff but at the same time what if she's not bluffing and she might just go after Ivy? I dialled Toby's number same time and he answered after a while panting and gasping for air

PC

Him: Red

Me: did I catch you at a bad time?

Him: not really. What's up?

Me: you in town?

Him: at the moment no, I'll be flying in later tonight. Why?

Me: it's nothing. go back to what you were doing

Him: is everything ok Red?

Me: yeah everything is fine T. Thanks

Him: ok then. Bye

Me: bye

End Of PC

I needed to stop this thing of calling Tobias whenever I felt like something was troubling me. I was not his problem. He sounded like he wasn't alone or maybe I'm just hearing things. I went upstairs to fetch my handbag with my keys to T's place and then went out requesting an uber to drive me to T's house. I unlocked with my key and the door wasn't locked so I walked in and shouting T's name but didn't get a response so I walked in further and was welcomed by the tv making noise playing alone so I switched it off, maybe he was running late and forgot to switch it off. As I walking around I noticed a red G-string on the floor

Me: OK!

I remembered the real reason I was here anyway. I walked to the stairs and made my upstairs to Ivy's room and I looked for the necklace and found it underneath her dressing table and then took it and made my way out bumping into yours truly Mary-Ann wearing T's t-shirt. We looked at each other for a while before T's voice broke the silence

T: Red what are you doing here?

Me: I came to fetch this.

I said dangling Ivy's necklace

Mary: nice to meet you Red. I'm Mary-Ann. Sorry about the way I behaved when we first met. I didn't know you were Toby's cousin

I nodded

Me: yeah sure you didn't know. Nice to meet you I'm Yolanda

Her: nice to meet you too

We let go of each other's hands

Me: I should go.

Her: it was really nice to meet you

Me: same here

I walked down the stairs really fast thinking about what had just happened back there. One minute she's the ex and suddenly the busy making backs (having sex) ... What's the deal? I was about to walk out the door when T grabbed my arm. I looked at his hand on my arm.

Me: what?

Him: wait!

Me: for?

Him: it's not what you think it is Red

Me: obviously. Cause I thought that T lied to me and said he was out of town

He looked down

Me: can I leave now?

Him: Red please

Me: we don't want to keep Mary-Ann waiting T. Enjoy the rest of your trip.

I yanked his hand off and walked away. I don't have a problem with him banging his ex but the lying. I hate lies. I don't even understand why he lied. He and I can't be together because of pretty much everything right? he's like my "cousin" so he and I can never be. Wait why was I getting all worked up over this? I like like Miso more than I like Toby and today just proved why I should just be with someone my age at least he won't hurt me the way T just did. Please don't judge me about the Miso thing, it was a moment of weakness... look at the guy and tell me you wouldn't have given it to him same time? The guy is flames ok! I don't know what it is I feel for T but seeing Mary-Ann I got jealous. I requested an uber and headed back to Ri's home. Her mother and brothers were back and they were just chatting up a storm. I greeted and sat down for a while joining in on the conversations before my phone rang and it was T

I ignored his calls until I got one from Miso which for some reason brought a smile on my face. I excused myself and went to answer him in the room

PC

Me: Hey you

Voice: tell that boyfriend of yours to make his password less predictable

It was Boobie. I just laughed hard

Me: Hey Boobie

Her: that name is not for you people to use! I've been waiting for your call but kids of today don't know that cell phones were invented to make calls

Me: How are you Boobie? I'm good too thank you

Her: don't play smart with me Buttercup.

Me: your grandson is the one that hasn't given me your number

Her: whatever. How are you?

Me: I already told you

Her: yeah but I'm only asking now. how are you Buttercup?

I giggled

Me: I'm good Boobie and how are you?

Her: I'm good too thanks. So aren't you going to ask where the owner is?

Me: ok Boobie. Where is Miso?

Her: I sent him to town to fetch something from his grandfather's office and he forgot his phone here. So we have an hour or 2 depending on traffic

I chuckled. This woman though!

Me: uhm ok

Her: you know you need to forgive your mother right?

Me: that's what Miso told you?

I sighed in relief

Her: child holding in anger for what she put you through won't get you anywhere instead you'll just be this bitter and angry person for the rest of your life. She may have ill-treated you but do you think you'd be this person you are now had she treated you any differently?

I kept quiet. How am I expected to forgive this person who just keeps tormenting because she can? It's not easy to just move on from what she keeps doing

Her: I started visiting my father's house and actually spending the night without having nightmares when I was in Matric because every time I went to his house I'd have nightmares of what my nanny put me through. The day I visited her at the mental institution she was in I got closure and I was able to actually sleep on my old bed without getting any nightmares. I needed to forgive her in order for me to move on from the nightmares and the self-torture. As much as we don't realise it holding onto the pain people put us through is harming us emotionally more than it is physically because then we become prisoners of our minds and end up in places we never imagined we'd be in.

I was somewhat confused what she meant about her nanny

Me: Boobie

Her: yes?

Me: may I ask what happened with your nanny?

Her: considering how close you and Miso are, I would have assumed that he told you. My nanny molested me from when I was 5 until I was 7 I think. But here I am today an amazing mother and even super cool grandmother

I chuckled at her cockiness.

Her: I know our sufferings are different and they will never be the same but just think about what I'm saying ok

Me: How do I forgive someone who lives to make my life miserable? Every time she sees me it's like she looks for ways to torture me and she uses my little sister to get to me because she knows I would lay my life for her

Her: How often do you pray?

I kept quiet

Her: I'll take that as not often enough. Child you won't make it through this life without God. I lost my husband of 40 something years and I should be broken beyond repairs but here I am stronger because of God. I don't hate God for taking him from me, if its anything I'm grateful because I know he is in a better place and he is not suffering. I am grateful I got to know such an amazing man and got to live my life with him. You see the thing with you guys is that whatever bad thing that happens to you, you blame God for it because you probably feel like he's not seeing your pain or your tears but you forget one thing, he never gives us challenges that we won't be able to handle. He knows how much we can take in. The things you are going through now are building you up into the best warrior this world has ever seen.

Me: ey Boobie

Her: I'm not a preacher now but child pray. There's always an answer in prayer.

Me: I hear you Boobie

Her: and I will also pray for you ok. Yuh ha.a bye now my ear is hot

I laughed. Worse she's the one that wont stop talking.

Me: ok Boobie bye

Her: bye Buttercup.

***End Of PC**

Chapter 19

After the call with Boobie I don't know how I felt but it was a good feeling. I looked at the box and opened it and there were papers in the box. More like mail. I opened the mail and it was letters from someone with the initials CY. Mason with pictures of me and a child that looked just like me. Behind the picture it was written Yolanda and Yonda Graham. And there were more pictures of a boy that looked just like me. If I was seeing proper, I had a twin. What the hell??? There was a phone number on the letter with these pictures. I dialled it.

PC

Person: Hello?

Me: uhhm hello

Person: who is this?

Me: is this CY Mason?

Person: Who is this?

Me: this is Yolanda Graham

She kept quiet for some time

Me: hello???

Her: sorry I'm still here. Oh my God it's so good to hear your voice. I'm Candice Yolanda Mason. I'm your mother

I chuckled. Ahhh this person had jokes for days. What did she mean she was my mother? My mother is Ester and she was a nurse so I don't know who this woman is.

Her: Yolanda

Me: yes

Her: how are you baby?

Me: what do you mean you my mother?

Her: baby where are you? Can we meet and talk?

Me: how do I know that you really are my mother and this is not some trick?

Her: the fact that you calling me should give you all these answers to the questions you have

Me: I found your number in a letter addressed to my father

Her: how is Carl anyway?

Me: he's dead

She kept quiet for a while

Me: anyway I called because I was curious. Bye Candice

Her: Yolanda please

Me: what?

Her: where are you? Can we meet up for lunch?

Me: I'm in Carli

Her: I'll be flying in tomorrow morning then

Me: flying in?

Her: I live in New York

I hit my forehead. Of course she did because that's the return address written on the mail.

Me: ok bye

Her: thank you for calling me

Me: who is Yonda?

Her: that's your twin baby

Me: I don't have a twin

Her: yes, you do. He's studying at Harvard

End of PC

I ended the call. All this was too much for me to be having the conversation via phone call. I have a twin brother. My real mother lives in New York. What sick twisted joke is this? I read some of the letters and they weren't much just her checking up on me and asking pictures of me and stuff and her telling dad about Yonda and how much he has grown and stuff. And then

there was one letter addressed to me. it read "Dear Yolanda. I know I wasn't the best father to you guys and I am sorry. Yola I know I wasn't there for you when you needed me the most and I know that I could have done something to at least save you from the suffering but I didn't and there's no excuse as to why I didn't do something either than me being a terrible father. I wasn't blind, I saw the change of clothes, the change of personality and everything else and I'm sorry you went through that. You and your sister deserve better. I know you smart and I know that you will find a way out of that house for you and your sister. There's a guy named Tobias Evans

Advertisement

he does your mother's accounting and mine too and I have asked him to take care of you and your sister and cater to everything you two might ever need. He's a great guy and I know that you are in safe hands where he is concerned. I saved up enough to set you and your sister up for until you are done with university and have a stable job. In this box you will find letters from your real mother, Ester is Ivy's mother and I'm sorry you had to find out this way. Your real mother's number is written in one of the letters and she will explain to you everything that happened in the past leading to the separation of you and your twin. I love you baby and please tell Ivy I am truly sorry for everything." the letter made me so mad. I found

myself tearing it into pieces. So me meeting Toby was orchestrated by my parents. They planned it all, he's not some good Samaritan. Good Samaritans don't exist in this day and age, how was I so stupid anyway? I should have known something was wrong. I called Miso. He always has a way of calming me down when I'm like this.

PC

Him: hey Buttercup

I just cried realizing just how much I missed him and needed him right now. Miso always came running when I called him crying or had a nightmare and he would just comfort me and make me feel better. With him it didn't matter what the time was or whether he had to go to class, he just came to my rescue

Him: Buttercup are you crying? Please don't cry now

Me: I jus... I just miss you so much

Him: I miss you too Buttercup

Me: when are you coming back?

Him: next weekend. There's the reading of the will and stuff

Me: oh ok

Him: Buttercup

Me: yes

Him: talk to me. what's going on?

Me: she's not my mother

He kept quiet for a while

Him: I'm sorry to hear that Buttercup

Me: I'm a twin

He chuckled and so did I

Him: is she as hot as you?

Me: it's a he Miso

Him: boring. Here I was thinking we could have a threesome

I laughed and so did he. Miso though

Him: and she laughs!

Me: screw you!

Him: at least you laughing so we good

Me: Miso

Him: Yes

Me: just come back already. there's a lot we need to talk about

Him: am I in trouble?

Me: of cause not. I just need my bestie that's all

Him: and you have him all to yourself. So what about your real mother?

Me: I called her and she said we should meet up tomorrow. She lives in New York

Him: so if you two hit it off does that mean you'll move to NY and leave me here?

I chuckled

Me: of cause not. I doubt we'll hit it off

Him: I think you will. I think you going to love her

Me: I feel like my life was planned out for me and I'm just acting a scene in it

Him: is that such a bad thing?

Me: my meeting Toby was planned out by my parents. How do I just get over that?

Him: had you not met Toby then you wouldn't have met me. Something good came out of this play you in

Me: I guess

Him: cheer up. Dress to kill tomorrow and make that woman see what she missed out on

I laughed

Him: so what did you and Boobie speak about?

Me: I didn't speak to Boobie

Him: I know she called you. She's the only one who would figure out my password. Mom knows it but she wouldn't call you and talk this long with you

Me: ok fine you got me. but ask her what we spoke about

Him: I'm asking you Buttercup

Me: she was giving me a life lesson based on her experiences

Him: fine I believe you

Me: cause that's all there is to know

Him: fine.

Me: Nguwe Wedwa

Him: Nguwe Wedwa

I found myself blushing

Him: still don't know what it means?

Me: nope. I just love how it sounds

Him: of cause you do. It means you the only one

Me: I'm the only one who what?

Him: does it matter?

Me: fine I'll let you be

Him: good girl. When I get back we going to somewhere

Me: where?

Him: stop asking questions. Bye Buttercup

Me: bye Bubbles

End of PC

After the call with Miso I felt a little better. At ease than before. I took out the letters and read them and there wasn't much either than mom asking about my sister Ivy and the step mother she deserted me to. She seemed to be in love with my father and she was married to some guy name Ethan Mason and he's been dying to meet me, she was pleading dad to bring me to NY so that my step daddy and twin could meet me but seems like my dad didn't want any of that so eventually she stopped begging him in the letters. The last letter she sent was from before dad died. Toby sent me a text asking me to meet up with him for breakfast but I flatly ignored his text.

Chapter 20

I found her already sitting down with shades on inside the restaurant mind you pressing her big iPhone whatever, red matte lipstick with pink cheeks and hair red like mine tied up in a neat bun wearing a white sleeveless blazer and a white body hugging below the knee dress with dusty pink red bottom pumps that matched her handbag. She looked like a trophy wife shame. She stood up attempting to hug me but I gave her my hand to shake and she seemed disappointed but we shook hands and took our seats. I opted for one of the most expensive restaurants around and I dressed the part for it too. Messy bun, rosy cheeks, nude heels, blue boyfriend jeans and a nude shirt tucked in front. I looked good to say the least.

Her: Yolanda

Me: Candice

Her: you look beautiful

Me: thank you. So do you

Her: do you want anything to eat or drink?

Me: I'll have apple juice

Her: ok

She hailed up her hand and a waiter walked over to our table and asked what we would like and Candice requested menus

and two apple juices. I just looked at her and rolled my eyes.
the waiter left

Her: so what do you want to know?

Me: What do you do?

Her: I'm a fashion buyer

I nodded

Her: what are you studying? I understand you doing your first year

Me: surely you already know seeing that you know the person I live with

Our juices came and she sipped on hers and looked up at me

Her: how is accounting treating you?

Me: good. And fashion buying?

Her: I love my work. Yolanda look I know we didn't come here to talk about me and my work. Ask me anything you want to know

Me: Why did you and dad split?

Her: because your father came from a superstitious family that believed that twins were an abomination to Gods creation or something. If his family had found out that I was carrying twins, then they would have killed you and your brother so we

decided that it was best that I take Yonda with me and he keep you. Ester was the one who helped me give birth to you and your brother and so I suggested that your father marry her and pretend that she was your mother, Ester and I were good friends and she loved your father so it was only fitting that she replace me and be your mother

Me: did you ever think that maybe you were throwing me in the lion's den?

Her: what do you mean?

Me: After your ex-boyfriend lost his job he became abusive. This one time he hit her so bad she landed up in hospital for two weeks and when she came back she wasn't the same anymore. She lost her job and she completely changed. Ivy and I would go to bed without anything to eat. See, while you were out buying fashion your daughter was sleeping on an empty stomach

She wiped away the tear that managed to escape the corner of her eye

Me: I'm not looking for your pity or sympathy or whatever

Her: Lala if I had known

Me: but you didn't know Candice. Your husband didn't tell you

Her: Lala I'm

Me: sorry? no need. I don't want your apology. I just wanted to meet you because a friend of mine suggested it would be a good idea

Later on yesterday she called me telling me she had landed and that may we meet for breakfast and I should text her the name of the restaurant of my choice. I had decided against it until I spoke to Miso and he told me that I needed answers and she was the only one who could give them to me and so I came.

Her: Yolanda

Me: What's the deal with Tobias Evans. I know that you and your ex figured it would be best if you guys dumped us on him

Her: Tobias is a friend's son and I've known him since he was a child and I knew that you would be safe with him. he's a great guy

Me: so what? He was meant to keep tabs on me

Her: of cause not

Me: then? You needed someone to tell you about your daughter and with your ex dead, you needed him to take me in and convince me that he was a better person to live with

Her: Lala

Me: I feel like the more I seat here with you the angrier I get. It's all your fault that I went through everything I went through.

I know Tobias told you what happened to me. I know he reported back to you as to what I endured living under Ester's care. Had you been a mother and took me and your precious son then none of this would have happened. I wouldn't have lost my virginity to a man old enough to be my father and I wouldn't have been made to sleep with different men every day. I wouldn't have been a sex object had you been a better mother to me like you are with your son. Just answer me one question. Why didn't you love him instead of me?

Her: your father figured I would maybe meet a man and if I did he didn't want that man mistreating his daughter

I nodded and took my bag and ran out. I was boiling with so much anger inside of me. I just wanted to punch something and maybe I'd be better. She came and grabbed my wrist as I was about to cross and a car flew right past in front of me

Me: you should have let it hit me.

Her: don't be stupid. I can't change the past but Lala I'm sorry. I'm sorry for everything you went through because of me and your father. We did what we thought was right at the time. Lala I wanted to take you with me, I really did but your father begged me to leave you behind because you were a reminder of me to him

I chuckled in disbelief. If I was then why the hell did he hit me with his belt when instead of righting my wrongs and talking to me like a normal parent would have. Why didn't he try to solve things in a more rational manner than belting me?

Me: goodbye Candice Mason.

I looked at the robots and then crossed over to the other side where an uber was waiting for me. I got in and it drove off to Ari's home. I got there and took the box and took it over to Ester's house. I knocked and she walked up and opened

Her: so?

Me: here is that box you asked for and its open

Her: thank you!

She opened it and started searching

Her: where's the rest of this?

Me: what do you mean?

Her: I mean where is the will?

Me: what will?

Her: don't play dumb with me

Me: I really have no idea what will you talking about. That's all that's in there

She looked at me and shook her head

Her: you must think you smarter than me

Me: no I don't. Goodbye Ester

I walked away before she could throw any threats my way. that woman was something else

Advertisement

she was EVIL! There was not even anything motherly about the way she looked at me. Maybe it once was there but it wasn't there anymore. The way she looked at me was different from how Candice looked at me, Candice had love in her eyes, she had hurt in her eyes and regret of probably entrusting her friend with me. On the way home I decided to google this woman who calls herself my mom and Google had a lot to say about her and her family. She had two sons, my twin and another little boy who was now 5 years old and her husband was in his mid-forties while she looked was 20 years older than me. she was 37 years old. I got home and T was standing in the kitchen drinking a glass of wine.

Him: He...

I threw a slap at him and he held his cheek shocked

Him: Red what the fuck?

Me: you lied to me Tobias! You're a fucking liar!

I walked away to my room and he followed me

Him: Red what are you talking about?

Me: I was a pawn in you, Candice and my father's game. We didn't meet by chance

Him: Red I c...

Me: what? Explain? Let's hear it Tobias cause that's all I've been hearing today

Him: I can't reason with you when you like this

Me: then don't reason with me Tobias. Tell me the fucking truth

We were standing on the edge of the stairs he pulled me so we were standing in a safer spot I guess.

Him: I helped your parents open a trust fund for you and then your father had me open one for Ivy too. When your father lost his job he reached out to me and asked me to take care of you guys when he was no more and not to mention anything about the money he left you and your sister. When your father died I was elsewhere busy with work so I couldn't attend his funeral and meet you guys and when we met that day I had just gotten back the previous night and I was headed to your place, when I saw you I recognised you from a picture your father left me before he died and I knew it was you that I was going to

This whole time I was quiet looking at him. I felt so played and so angry. Good people don't exist, instead we meet people that were planned to meet us and everything is just orchestrated for us. people just like to play God nowadays.

Him: Red I'm sorry

Me: are we related?

He shook his head so quick

Him: my parents and yours grew up together and they were good friends from since primary till now. So many times I wanted to tell you the truth but your mother insisted on you finding out on your own

Me: so you were meant to keep an eye on my sister and I. for how long?

Him: as long as I can. Red at first it was a task but in the long run I fell for you, something I was not supposed to but I couldn't help myself and I knew it was wrong. That's why you saw Mary-Ann here, I was trying to distract myself from thinking about you and wanting to be with you but I couldn't. she's not you Red. I want to be with you so badly but I can't without risking everything of which I'm willing to risk it all but I don't know whether or not you feel the same way especially with Miso in the picture I chuckled in my head thinking about just how confusing all of this was. I mean what was God doing

to me? Why was he even doing this to me? I don't deserve such confusion shame! I looked at him once and then walked to my room and locked the door. I couldn't do this. My phone was ringing none stop, it was Candice and Ari calling me.

Chapter 21

Miso was back!!! We were chilling in my flat with me laying on his chest resting between his legs playing with each other's fingers chatting, well I was telling him about what went down in his absence. I haven't seen Candice since the other day and I have been ignoring Toby too. I went back to my flat.

Him: so are you going to return her calls or what?

Me: I don't want to. I'm still trying to digest that my little sister and I are half sisters

Him: you and Ivy are sisters. As much as you were before knowing the truth. The truth shouldn't change anything

Me: but

Him: Buttercup

Me: I don't want one of your lectures

Him: I'll give you one anyway. This changes nothing. Your mother is a different woman from the one you grew up living with, you said it yourself. You said she had a spark in her you never really quite saw with Ester and that's ok because Ester was never your real mother to begin with. Give Candice a chance, she might just be a better mother than this woman you once called your mother

Me: what if she's worse?

Him: I'm sure your father wouldn't leave you her details if he didn't think finding her was worth it

Me: but

Him: no buts. Call her Buttercup and meet up with her

He let go of my hands and then handed me my phone.

Me: later

Him: no. now!

Me: b...

Him: no buts

I sighed and went to her number and then pressed the call button. It's been a week since her and I met up. We were left with one more week which is this one until we open schools. She answered after some time

PC

Her: Yolanda

Me: Candice hi

Her: how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks and how are you?

Her: I'm also good too thank you

Me: are you busy?

Her: at the moment no

Me: you still around?

Her: of cause I'm still around

Me: can we meet up for breakfast tomorrow?

Her: of cause. I'd love that

Me: I'll text you where to meet up

Her: uhhm thank you

Me: bye

Her: bye

End of PC

He kissed my neck and I giggled

Him: I'm proud of you

Me: yeah whatever

Him: Kyle is not Yaya's son and she loves him like he's her own

Me: really?

Him: yeah. His mom is this other woman dad dated for like a week or two and shiit went down and she got pregnant and Kyle was the result

Me: would explain his complexion compared to the rest of you guys

Him: and how are the rest of us?

Me: you guys are caramel while he's white and he looks nothing like your mom like you and your siblings

Him: I don't look like Yaya

I chuckled and he laughed

Me: so the tattoo... when did you get it?

Him: before I went home.

Me: and Yaya?

Him: she almost bit my head off. She was on some tip that I should get it removed and dad came to my defence

Me: yeah maybe next time you'll listen to me

Him: argh Yaya overreacts too much

Me: do you blame her?

Him: so when are you calling Toby?

Me: huh?

Him: the guy didn't buy you Buttercup. He was only tryna help you and Ivy out and he got your mom off your back

Me: I'm not mad about the money, I'm mad about how he handled the situation. Like we some sort of items you can put prices on. It really pisses me off and it took me back to a time in my life I would like to forget completely about.

Him: see why you need to see a therapist?

Me: I'm not seeing a damn shrink and that's that!

Him: fine then. Call Toby

Me: later Miso.

Him: hungry?

Me: not really. You said you love me

Him: I did? It must have been the sex

I turned to look at him and he laughed

Advertisement

I really wanted to do a follow up on the whole I love you shiit

Him: I meant every word Buttercup

He was looking straight into my eyes

Me: you can't do that Miso

Him: do what?

Me: love me. it doesn't exist, it's just a shortcut to getting your heartbroken

Him: take it however you want to take it Buttercup but I love you and I really want to be with you. I know you feel the same and because I love and respect you I won't pressure you into anything

Me: isn't it a little too late to say that now? seeing that we've already had sex and all

Him: hahaha we can have lots of sex and I still won't pressure you into anything you don't want to do

I found myself laughing and he just smiled watching me laugh at him. Miso was just another character and I loved his character because he was so carefree and just amazing to be around

Me: whatever

Him: I really want to kiss you right now

Me: then what's stopping you?

Him: I don't want to do anything you don't want to do

I turned my whole body around and faced him with my hands wrapped around his neck and then kissed his soft yummy lips with his hands resting on my ass. I'm not your typical white girl with a super flat ass. Some of us were fortunate enough to

have an ass, I got it from my mom ey cause Ivy is as flat as they come. He broke the kiss and just looked at me

Him: for a white girl you sure have an ass

I pulled his ear. We just shared a great kiss and he broke it to tell me that? Really guys? He laughed and I giggled at the sight of him laughing

Him: ok ok stop pulling my ear. I'm sorry

Me: kiss me

Him: hell no

Me: what?

Him: let's not start something we won't finish. I don't have condoms with me

Me: we'll get the morning after pill tomorrow

Him: don't wanna take any risks.

I just looked at him

Him: next time Buttercup. Don't sulk now

Me: I'm not sulking.

Him: you so adorable

Me: screw you!

Him: whatever

He hit my nose playfully and laughed at me. I won't lie I was annoyed but what was I to do.

Him: lets watch a movie

Me: got anything in mind?

Him: anything but 50 shades

Me: but it's a nice movie. Never mind the sex and everything

Him: it's a reap off. I read the book and its nothing like the movie

Me: I didn't read the book and I feel like the movie was nice

Him: you should read the book then because the book is everything the movie is not

Me: would you do that?

Him: do what?

Me: What Christian Grey does

Him: if you comfortable in exploring

Me: no thank you

Him: it's not as bad as it looks

Me: and how would you know? Ever tried it?

Him: no but I'd love to try it out with you Buttercup

Me: I'm not that bold.

Him: then we won't do it

Me: I love you

I clasped my mouth. I don't know where that came from but I just said it. I think he was just as shocked as I was. I think I meant it. I don't know. Argh what's wrong with me, you see the things Miso makes me do and say? He makes me weak. He wasn't smiling or laughing, I couldn't read his expression let alone understand it.

Chapter 22

Me: uhm

Him: you just said you love me

Me: urrh

Him: Buttercup

I just buried my face in his chest and tried to process what I've just put myself in. his phone rang... Thank God.

PC

Him: Hello

Person: Hey babe are you busy?

Him: Good Michelle and how are you?

Her: I'm Ok. Can you come and fetch me please?

Him: are you ok? you sound like you've been crying

Her: please just come fetch me

Him: send me your location.

Her: ok

End of PC

Him: Buttercup we have to go.

Me: is she ok?

Him: I don't know. Let's go

I got off of him and then he took his car keys and his phone beeped indicating Michelle's location. I was worried about her because this person sounded shaken over the phone. We got to the house and it was a beautiful house with beautiful cars parked outside

Me: is this Michelle's home?

Him: no its her boyfriend's place

I just nodded. He looked at me before getting out and I just looked outside because I was not going to get out with him. He walked inside the house after locking the car doors and then he came back after a while carrying Michelle in his arms bridal style. I got out and opened the door for him and he put her in and covered her with his jacket. She was wearing a skimpy skirt with a crop top vest and a pair of heels. She looked like a mess. He got inside the driver's seat looking all kinds of pissed and I just kept quiet and starred outside. He had veins popping in his fists as he clenched the steering wheel tighter. We got to the hospital and he carried her inside. I walked in behind him and sat next to him and rested my head on his shoulder.

Me: want anything to eat or drink?

He was so lost in his own world I was trying to break the ice. We've been here for over 2 or 3 hours now. from what I gathered judging by the bruises on her face a fight broke out.

Him: no thanks. Do you need me to take you home?

Me: no I'll stay with you

Him: you sure?

Me: yeah. She's my friend too

He nodded

Me: you don't happen to have her parent's numbers?

Him: no. please find out from Mia if she has their numbers or not

I nodded.

Me: she's going to be fine

Him: I hope so

I walked away and called Mia and she said she was on her way. Said Michelle's parents wouldn't come here because Michelle lied to them and said she was going to Mia's place and now if they found out she lied hell would break loose.

Me: Mia said she'll handle it

He nodded.

Me: Miso what happened in there?

Him: I don't want to lie to you Buttercup, I don't know. When I got there her boyfriend was passed out on the floor and she was curled up in a corner. I think they fought or something
A doctor called Michelle's name and we both got up.

Her: where are her parents?

Miso: how is she?

Her: I need her parents

Miso: her parents are out of the country and we can't reach them. How is she?

Her: and you are?

Me: he's her boyfriend and I'm her sister.

Miso looked at me and I looked at the doc. Michelle is white and Miso is black... what was I to say?

Me: how is she? Can we see her?

Doc: she suffered from head trauma

I looked at her really confused

Me: head trauma?

Doc: yes. It's like someone bashed her head against something but she's ok and she's still alive, even though she has a few broken ribs and none fatal internal injuries

I nodded

Miso: can we see her?

Doc: I need you two to tell me the truth. What happened?

Me: She called us crying and asked us to fetch her. she sounded really scared

Doc: ok please follow me

Doc didn't seem convinced at all by our lies but we had to. We got to her ward and she was sleeping with an oxygen mask covering her mouth and nose and had a bandage wrapped around her head. I held on tightly to Miso as we got closer. She even had a blue eye. Whatever happened must have been that bad.

Doc: may I please speak to you alone outside

Me: uhm ok.

We walked out of the ward.

Her: I know you lying

I looked at her puzzled

Her: tell me the truth

Me: I don't know what truth you are looking for

Her: I'm not stupid little girl. you either tell me the truth or I involve the cops

Me: ok fine. I'm her friend and so is the guy I'm with. she called us shaken and crying and asked us to fetch her and like any normal friends we didn't ask any questions, we went to fetch her and brought her straight here.

Her: did you know that your friend was pregnant?

Me: was? What do you mean?

Her: your friend was beat up to a point where she had a miscarriage

I clasped my mouth with both hands. Michelle was pregnant?

Doc: I'm sorry

Me: uhm thank you doc

Her: you can go in but you can't stay for long as visiting hours are over

I nodded and then doc left and I stood by the door for a while before walking in

Her: he found out about us and he got really angry. I don't know how he found out

Him: I'm sorry

Her: he accused me of lying to him and wanting him to take responsibility for a baby that wasn't his

Him: baby?

Her: I'm pregnant.

Him: and how sure are you that the baby you carrying is his and not mine?

Her: because it can't possibly be yours. I took the morning after the day after you and I had sex

He nodded

Her: Miso I love you, I always did. I should have never fooled around when we were together. I messed us up

I cleared my throat and they both turned to look at me.

Michelle's facial expression was not so welcoming at all. I understand that she is in hospital and all but the least she could do is fake a smile.

Me: uhm hey you're awake

Her: yes. Thank you

Me: glad you're ok. I'm sorry for your loss

Her: loss?

Him: loss?

Me: uhhm

Call me jealous or whatever but she deserves it. Michelle is a bitch! She wants the best of both worlds and now that I have Miso's attention she suddenly wants him and suddenly loves him? I'm sorry it doesn't work like that. Miso is mine now.

Miso: Buttercup what are you talking about?

Me: I'm sorry Michelle but you lost the baby

Her: you lying

Me: while you were sleeping, your doctor asked me to break the news to you

She shook her head and Miso looked at me, I just shrugged. Curse and call me whatever name but what were you going to do in my situation, this bitch is ouchea confessing her feelings to my man. Shoot me ok! he brushed her hand as she cried

Me: I'll give you two some space

I walked out. I was reevaluated by just watching her. I'm not a jealous person but I guess my feelings for Miso are getting the best of me. I called T

Miso said to call him anyway.

PC

Him: Red. Thank God, are you ok? I've been looking for you everywhere

Me: T, I'm fine. How are you?

Him: it's great to hear your voice, I've been worried sick about you

Me: I'm sure you have but I'm fine T. How have you been?

Him: missing you that's all and worried sick and your sister has been on my neck about your whereabouts

Me: I haven't told her anything yet. Are you busy tomorrow?

Him: I'm free at lunch

Me: I'll see you then

Him: thank you Red

Me: don't mention it. Next time don't lie to me please

Him: lesson learnt.

Me: I'll see you tomorrow

Him: can't we go out for a really super late lunch?

Me: nah not today T. We'll meet up tomorrow instead

Him: have you spoken to your mom?

Me: yes, and we meeting up for breakfast

Him: oh ok then

Me: Bye T

Him: bye Red

End of PC

Mia walked up to me and gave me a hug. We broke it

Her: Where is she? Is she ok? What happened?

Me: She's ok, she lost the baby and I think she and her boyfriend had a fight... the rest she will tell you

Her: thank you Yola for coming through

Me: I still think her parents need to know

Her: her parents would murder her Yola

I nodded. I told her where her friend's room was and then told her I needed the loo. I walked to the doctor's office and enquired about contraceptives. I'm scared of needles and I tend to forget so I opted for the iud because then at least I'll do a monthly check up and I'll be good to go. When I was done I paid and then I went to find Miso who was busy tryna call someone and he seemed really frustrated

Me: everything ok?

Him: where the hell were you? Didn't you see my missed calls?

Me: I was at the doctor's office. Everything ok? you never shout at me

Him: I was worried about you. One minute you here and the next you disappear

Me: it's cute of you to worry about me but I'm fine

Him: what were you doing at the doctor's office?

Me: personal matters

While I was in there I also did a pregnancy test and a hiv test and both were negative. He just nodded

Him: ready to go home?

Me: of course

He put his heavy arm around my neck and we walked out to his car. He drove past Mac D and bought us fold over meal and then drove us home. We went to his apartment and he threw himself on the couch and I put the food on the table and got on top of him and wrapped my arms around his neck and he rested his head on my ass.

Me: you and Michelle huh?

Him: you heard that?

Me: so what? Were you two an item or what?

Him: I wanted us to be one but she told me she had a boyfriend and could only settle to be fuck buddies. At first I wasn't for it but a nigga's gotta eat so we did our thing until I saw you around campus. I started getting distant and then when Mia befriended you, I knew I had to try everything in order to be with you even if it meant getting you jealous over her

Me: and did it work?

He chuckled

Him: I think it did. Look at you now. I saw your face when you broke the news to her, your jealousy is cute actually

He said planting an unexpected kiss on my parted lips. I didn't want to respond but good God Miso's lips did the things to a lady and I was once again weak for him.

Chapter 23

After last night I didn't think I'd be able to walk but I could. Miso and I went all night and even this morning and I won't lie the pain wasn't as bad and the pleasure I got from it all is inexplicable. To say the least, I was content. We were in the bathtub together and he was putting shampoo on my hair

Him: you sure you'll be able to walk today

Me: it's all your fault

Him: you didn't stop me though meaning you wanted us to

Me: will you be driving me there or you going to visit Michelle?

Him: so she stopped being Mitch?

Me: shut up

He chuckled

Him: I'll drop you off and you'll call me when you need me to fetch you

Me: actually I was thinking of meeting up with Ivy too so I'll see you later

Him: sure thing. You'll call when you need me to fetch you that's all I'm saying

Me: I might sleep over at Tobias' place. I called him yesterday and we agreed to meet up

Him: ok cool

Me: you not jealous or whatsoever?

Him: I'm the one your told you love and not him... I'm good

I turned to him and he just smiled and planted a kiss on my lips and broke it

Me: you are something else

Him: I know Buttercup.

When we were done he drove me off to the mall and mother dearest was already waiting for me looking as elegant as usual. Woman was very punctual where time was concerned I don't wanna lie. We shared a hug and then broke it and sat down. I had called Ivy to meet us here and she was on her way too.

Her: how are you? You look beautiful

Me: thank you. I'm good thanks and how are you?

Her: I'm good too. thank you for contacting me

Me: so is there anything else that I need to know maybe?

Her: Either than your brothers, no there's nothing. Lala I don't know what you've been through and I hate myself for what you went through and I would really like to make it up to you

Me: no need for that. I called my sister to meet us here I hope you don't mind

Her: not at all

Me: I hope you not expecting you and I to play happy family now and me to call you mom or mother or whatever of that nature

Her: noted. Anything else?

Me: we'll figure everything else as we go along

Her: does this mean you letting me into your life?

Me: you the only parent I have. Might as well. But I am not moving to New York with you or readjusting my life to accommodate you, you going to be the one to do that. Ivy and I come as a package

Her: that much I know

Me: good then.

Just then Ivy greeted and we shared a hug and she sat down after greeting Candice. She looked at Candice and back at me and then back at her and back at me

Me: Sis meet Candice Yolanda Mason. She's a fashion buyer and she's my mother and she has two other sons of which one of them is my twin. She's married and she and Toby's parents were friends and I don't know what to order please suggest something.

That's how Ivy normally broke news to me when she wanted to tell me something and didn't know how to. she would just say everything at once and I'll be the one to filter it all out. by the time I was done her mouth was hanging loose.

Me: close your mouth or flies will enter. Candice this is my little sister Yvette

Candy: nice to meet you Ivy, I have heard so much about you
I was stunned and then I remembered that she got reports from Toby

Ivy: So you and I are half-sisters, meaning we only share a father with different mothers?

Me: sounds about right

Ivy: explains where you got the hair but I don't know where I got mine

Candy: your father. He dyed his hair black when he grew up and in school they wouldn't let him keep it that colour

Ivy: and my mother?

Candy: I wouldn't know because her natural hair colour was brunette the last time I saw her

Me: it's like Ivy's now

Candice nodded.

Ivy: nice to meet you Lala's mom

Candice: nice to meet you too

Me: you not mad or something?

Ivy: I don't have any reason to be. We sisters and that's all that matters

I brushed her hand and she smiled. We got to know each other better with Candice and through that getting to know each other we almost stayed till lunch but she had to fly back for some fashion viewing or whatever. She did offer to go with us but I told her not this time around and that I would fly to NY later today. She said she would book me an 11pm ticket then because the earlier one than that was fully booked. Ivy was really fond of this woman. We were on our way to meet T and we were talking about her mother. She wanted to go and see her

Me: Ivy come on

Her: whether we want to accept it or not Lala, she's still my mother

Me: nothing I say will convince you otherwise

She shook her head

Me: at least let me go with you

Her: Lala I'll be fine

I just nodded and got off at the restaurant while she drove off to see her mother. T was already seated and as I was walking towards him I got a message from Miso written "Nguwe Wedwa" and I just smiled alone

Advertisement

more like I giggled

T: you ok?

Me: it's nothing. Hey

I hugged him and he hugged me back and then we sat down opposite each other

Him: you look good, you glowing

Me: it's this thing called life. How are you?

Him: I'm ok and how are you?

Me: great. Candice is an interesting person

Him: no mom?

Me: nah. Too soon to be playing happy family, I'm flying to NY tonight

He nodded

Me: Thank you for the things you did because my parents put you up to do. You didn't have to but you did and I realised that I was being an ungrateful bitch and I'm sorry.

Him: Red

Me: I behaved like a brat and that's not me

Him: I understand

Me: thing is when you signed that cheque so easily it brought back old wounds and took me back to a place I never want to go back to

Him: I'm sorry for the way I handled things and I didn't mean to take you back to where you've been before

Me: We good?

Him: we good

We shook hands and laughed at how we probably looked from the person watching us. I just had a milkshake while he ate up. He got up to pay and I texted Miso to come and fetch me at BESS law firm because that's where Toby was working today and the café we were in was just next to BESS

Him: so you and Miso

We were walking out

Me: yeah

Him: if he makes you happy then I'm happy for you

Me: thank you

Him: but Red if he dare tries anything

Me: I know who to call don't worry

Him: good

We spoke about useless things while we were waiting for Miso. He parked in front of us and he greeted T then we got in and drove off

Him: how was lunch and breakfast?

Me: it was good. Candice is a good person

Him: I knew you'd like her

Me: whatever

Him: and Toby?

Me: all good. He knows we together

Him: so we together now?

Me: Miso

Him: I'm just stunned that's all. I'm happy that you admitting it

Me: whatever. When are you teaching me how to drive?

Him: there's a dozen driving schools around here

Me: but I want my boyfriend to teach me

Him: I'd love to teach you but not with my car

Me: come on

Him: no ways babes.

Me: so you love your car more than you love me?

Him: even if I didn't, if I wreck it, I aint getting another one

Me: fine

He pulled my hand and kissed it

Me: you don't know where those hands have been

Him: but I know what they've touched

I found myself laughing at how dirty minded this guy was

Me: you so dirty

Him: and you love me like that beautiful

Me: alright.

His phone rang and it was his mother. He answered it

PC

Her: Misokuhle Daniel Bess

Him: am I in trouble?

Her: I just miss my son. Haven't seen him ever since we got back from South Africa, starting to think that he's seeing someone

Him: maybe he is

Her: and she's making you lose contact with your mother?

Him: never Yaya

Her: then?

Him: I will come sleep over tomorrow. How's that?

Her: we won't be home. Your father and I have to attend some boring ass conference. He's giving a speech

Him: that sucks. So when will you guys be back?

Her: maybe next week. We figured we might as well make a holiday out of it. He's not coping with everything that's happened you know

Him: yeah I know.

Her: how are you holding up?

him: I'm holding up ok mom. I'll come sleep there tonight

He looked at me after saying that

Her: I hope so Miso. You do know that you can still go for therapy right?

Him: I've got it covered mom don't worry

Her: I really hope so. Boobie is flying in next weekend

Him: that's great. I can't wait

Her: maybe you'll be a regular here at home

Him: mother don't start. Where's your daughter?

Her: I have no idea. Kyle is the only one here

Him: ok cool. Mom I love you and bye now

Her: as if you the one that called. Bye Misokuhle

Him: you forgetting something

Her: what's that?

Him: really Yaya?

Her: doesn't your girlfriend ever tell you?

Him: ask her, she's sitting right next to me

I clasped my mouth and he laughed

Her: hey girlfriend

Me: hi Mrs Bess

Her: so you the girlfriend. How are you buttercup?

Me: I'm good Mrs Bess and how are you?

Her: I'm good too baby

Him: ok mom enough

Her: I haven't even said anything yet

Him: I know what you going to say and no she's not coming over anytime soon

Her: fine. Bye Buttercup

Me: bye Mrs Bess

Him: bye mom

End of PC

We were in the underground parking in our building already. he ran his hand through his brush cut and good God this man was sexy. He sighed.

Chapter 24

My boyfriend and I were good... Feels good calling him that. I was now in New York and as much as he wasn't happy with the short notice because apparently he had planned something for later on but he was more than supportive of the idea of me meeting my twin and other brother. I haven't heard anything from Ivy since yesterday and I don't know whether I should be worried or what because she also wasn't answering her phone and that too was raising up my pressure. Candice and I were driving home from the airport, I was dead tired.

Her: you must be tired?

Me: yep. I just want to sleep and wake up tomorrow later

She chuckled

Her: you sound like you love your beauty rest

Me: you have no idea

Her: I do because I get cranky when someone wakes me up

I chuckled. Yep this beautiful redhead is my mom alright

Me: I should call Miso and tell him I'm safe

I had a dozen missed calls from him. nigga should be sleeping but instead he ouchea calling me none stop. I called him and he answered same time making me laugh. He sounded sleepy and

his voice was doing a number on me... oh right he's also partly why I was dead tired, we had a lot of sessions before I went to board the plane and I didn't get much sleep on the plane because of my own trust issues with heights of which it wasn't as bad as I thought but yeah I travelled well and Miso and I said we would speak in the morning instead because now he just wanted to sleep knowing that I was safe.

Her: boyfriend?

Me: yeah

Her: how old is he?

Me: 30

She choked on her saliva and I couldn't help but laugh at her. I really wanted to pull her leg and seems to have worked perfectly

Me: I'm kidding mom, he's 18 doing his first year in Land Surveying and he's a Bess

She laughed at my last statement

Her: you almost gave me a heart attack there Lala

Me: I'm sorry. just wanted to see your reaction and its exactly as I had expected

Her: I'll get you

We drove inside this beautiful big house. The lights were still on for some reason, maybe they were eager to meet me? We took out my things and then she unlocked the door and we were met by my replica who looked more like dad though. He was wearing boxers and he was with a girl and the girl was sitting on top of the kitchen counter. I found myself smiling as I could feel mommy dearest fuming. This ought to be interesting

Her: Yonda Graham Mayson what is going on?

The girl jumped off the counter and she turned. She was a beautiful blonde. She was wearing bro's t-shirt which looked like a really short dress to her

Him: mom I can explain

Her: I'm waiting. Do your parents even know that you are in my house in the middle of the night?

She shook her head no looking down

Mom: so she can't speak yet she has the audacity to sit butt naked on top of my kitchen counter? Yonda drive this child home now

Him: but m...

Mom: did I stutter?

She shook his head and he walked towards the exit

Mom: we will speak of this tomorrow.

She put the keys on top of the kitchen counter and she turned to me. Yonda walked out with his girlfriend. I couldn't hold back the laugh, I'm sorry but Candice didn't strike me as the strict mother type of woman and to see her in action was really funny

Me: sorry you walked into that

Her: I should be apologising to you. I was never prepared for such

Me: and you didn't strike me as this strict mom. it's funny

Her: don't start with me. come let me show you where you'll be sleeping

I nodded and followed her carrying my bag. On our way up her son was walking down with his girlfriend who couldn't even look us in the eye

Mom: I expect my car keys right where they should be

Him: yes ma'am

He really seemed annoyed but what can one say, he was disrespecting her under her roof. In the morning I work up around 10 and brushed my teeth and showered before heading out. on my way out I bumped into twinny walking out of his

room all dressed up. My twin was hot and he had style too, his hair was well cut.

Me: morning

Him: sup'

Me: I'm Yolanda

Him: I know

Me: attitude much?

Him: shut up much?

Me: what the hell is your problem? I'm not the one who asked you to bring blondie over for a night cap

Him: you don't know me so watch how you speak to me

His phone rang and he walked away and left me stunned... why the attitude? What did I do? I walked downstairs and mom and a cutie were sitting there chatting like good old friends. I think that's my little brother.

Me: mornings

Them: morning

Her: Selwyn meet your sister Yolanda

Lala meet your brother Selwyn

Him: nice to meet you. Finally, a sister

He said that giving me a very tight warm hug, it felt good to be in his tiny arms. He was so welcoming and such a sweetheart

Me: nice to meet you too

We broke the hug

Me: you look like Ca... Lala

Him: so I've heard but I think I look like my dead. How old are you?

Me: same age as Yonda... We twins

Him: whoa that's not fun. Sharing a birthday and all? No thank you

I couldn't help but laugh and so did Candice. How was this little one Yonda's brother again? He was such a fun spirit

Me: I think I like you already

Him: trust me there's no reason to unlike me

I laughed at him

Mom: that's not the phrase

Him: I know mom. chill would you

Mom: I will hit you kiddo

Him: alright mom

His cologne filled the room before I even notice him standing behind me

Him: family

Sel: morning. Where to so early?

Him: none of your business. Morning mom

She just looked at him and then returned to drinking her tea

Sel: what did you do this time?

Him: shut up. Mom can I meet up with my friends?

Mom: so he knows how to ask for permission after all?

Him: mom I'm sorry about last night

Her: we will talk about what happened when your father gets back. You not going anywhere

Him: mom that's not fair

Her: what's not fair is to walk in on my half naked son with his half naked girlfriend busy doing lord knows in my kitchen. That is not fair Yonda

Him: but mom I apologised

Her: and I heard you. Lala have you showered already? I want to show you around

Me: I'll have breakfast first and then I'll be all yours

Her: Sel finish up baby Fred's mom is on her way

Him: almost done mom

She nodded and walked out. Yonda decided to take a seat with his flat ass on the high chairs.

Voice: family I'm home

I looked up and Good heavens the heavenly father can create! Ok maybe I spoke to soon, little one doesn't look like mommy but he looks like daddy. Nigga looked like he worked out every now and then. Selwyn was already hugging his father like there's no tomorrow

Him: I missed you too champ. How are you Yolanda?

Me: I'm good Mr Mason and how are you?

Him: I'm Craig. Nice to meet you, you look just like your mother

I smiled in acknowledgement of his statement. Of cause I looked like her.

Him: Yonda

Yoyo: dad

Him: how are you doing champ?

Yoyo: good dad and yourself? How was your trip?

Him: It was good, I'm good. Where's my beautiful wife?

He was carrying a bunch of lilies which I'm assuming were for his wife and a few paper bags. He handed one to me and one to each of his sons and then left us in the kitchen to go find his wife. He had bought me a necklace and earring set from Tiffany and Co. It was beautiful and I was in love with it. I walked upstairs to video call my man. He was shirtless and his tattoo was just popping

PC

Him: I was beginning to think the new family took my place

Me: they would never. Step daddy bought me this

I showed him the set and he smiled

Him: step daddy is tryna make an impression. See I was right about you meeting your mother

Me: yes babe you were

Him: somebody is still in PJs

Me: and somebody just finished their workout

Him: yep... gotta keep fit for my adorable freak of a girlfriend

Me: hey!

Him: you know you are. Look at you drooling now

Me: oh shut up. So did you end up going home?

Him: I'm meeting them up for breakfast

Me: greet them for me please

Him: obviously. Greet the new fam

Me: yoh mommy dearest is a strict one

Him: why do you say that?

Me: we walked in on my twin standing between some blonde chick's legs with her sitting on top of the counter doing lord knows. She was wearing his t-shirt and he was in boxers. She was so mad

Him: he should have known better

Me: yep. He has this attitude towards me

Him: he probably feels like you going to replace him or something

Me: we twins babe. I would never replace him

Him: you so adorable. Have you washed yet?

Me: yes... why?

Him: I wanted us to have phone sex

I laughed and so did he

Me: you are messed up you know that

Him: as long as I can still entertain you then I'm boyfriending well

Me: how's Michelle?

Him: she's ok I guess. Mia called her parents and they were devastated

Me: so what really happened to her?

Him: so she went to see the guy and told him she was preggies, nigga celebrated and then later on while Michelle was sleeping she was woken up by a slap on the cheek and then dragged by her leg to the floor. He saw old texts between Michelle and I and then shiit got real. They fought and fought and well the rest is history

I nodded

Me: so it's your fault basically

Him: what did I do?

Me: had you let her be happy in her relationship then none of this would have happened

Him: I'm not the one who declared his love to some nigga and vowed myself faithful and in a relationship. She should have known better

Me: so what are you saying?

Him: that when you in a relationship never be greedy because the consequences of it are not nice

I nodded

Him: Buttercup I love you and I would never do anything to jeopardise what we have... at least not intentionally

Me: I hear you

Him: good girl. kiss me

I laughed and pouted blowing him a kiss and he just laughed at me

Me: oh wow

Him: I'm admiring. Babe I love you and I have to go... Yaya's calling

Me: bye babe

End of PC

After the phone call I changed into a maxi dress with a pair of sandals and put on light make up and walked out with my things after a few selfies for Bae. Mom and her husband were walking out of their room giggling. They were cute together.

Chapter 25

2 YEARS LATER

I was now 19 years old and was graduating in a few months' time doing my internship in some banking firm while Miso was doing his Internship training... or at least should be. Candice and I, yes I never called her mom but Ivy did and we were good like that. Ivy never told me how things went with her mother but all I know is that she went back to live with her that year until now and they were good together. Now of course I wasn't happy about it but I had no choice because Ester is her mother and will always be. I avoided Ester at all costs by meeting Ivy in town rather than visiting her there. Toby and I were friends... more like he was my mentor and Miso and I were still besties and lovers though we fought every now and then like any normal couple but no fight was too big for us. I worked under Toby and he was single. Craig was a great father, my twin and I were like fire and ice we were always at each other's throats and my little brother Selwyn who was 12, was a sweetheart and we got along like a house on fire. Ivy was doing her matric and she was 15 years old and she wanted to study at Yale or Stanford and Craig said if she had the results then she could study anywhere she wanted to. I was meeting up with Miso for lunch. I sat down opposite him and poor thing looked like he hadn't slept in days.

Me: you look like shiit

Him: I know. How are you? How's work?

Me: I'm good. Work's good. How are you? How's school?

Him: I'm quitting

Me: I'm sorry what?

Him: I'm dropping out. Land surveying is not for me

Me: since when? How do your parents even feel about you quitting?

Him: Dad and I had an argument just this morning about it. I haven't told mom yet

I looked at him waiting for him to say he's joking or something but nope, not Misokuhle

Me: and if you quit what are you going to study? You already in your last year doing your Internship

Him: I know. I'm thinking of studying IT, Aya's husband has been teaching me a thing or two

Me: IT though?

Him: LS is boring Buttercup. I also want to do something I will enjoy doing like you and the rest of my siblings

Me: and what does Mama Bess say?

Him: dad will probably tell her when he gets back from his meeting

I just nodded. This guy is supposed to graduate next year; I don't get why the sudden change of heart. I thought he loved what he was doing and I'm certain his mom won't let him quit just like that. Oh God!

Me: Bubbles why don't you finish your Internship and then study IT when you've secured a job?

Him: Buttercup I...

His phone rang and he answered it. Judging by the sudden change of tone and look on his face you could tell it wasn't good news at all. He stood up

Me: what?

Him: my father was shot. I have to go

Me: Mis...

He was already out of the door. I settled the bill and then ran after him but he was already gone. He was in a bad state, I was praying so hard that he doesn't get into an accident

I cannot afford to lose him. I don't want to lose him. I love him that much. On the news in the café they were talking about a shooting that broke out and business Mogul Derrick Bess who was following in his father and grandfather's steps was shot

and it seems serious, the woman reading the news said she would update us later on. I looked at the time and my lunch was pretty much over but later on I was going to call Miso and go visit Mr Bess. I drove back to work, yes I had a car of my own... courtesy of my newly founded mother. She was actually not a house wife and she worked for the money she had and she was a great person, a good mother even though we had our differences every now and then. I got to the office and called Miso but he wasn't answering any of my calls.

Toby: hey Red please file these

Me: yeah sure

I did as told and then came back to my desk. I wasn't as productive as I normally was and I think Toby noticed

Him: Red you ok?

Me: Miso's dad was shot

Him: What? When?

Me: today. I found out during my lunch

Him: is your boyfriend ok?

Me: he's not answering my calls

Him: you should go check up on him

Me: I'll go after work

Him: no its fine there's not much to do today

Me: nah he needs to be with his family for now. I'll go in later

Him: ok fine then. Please get your head back to work then

I nodded and we did a few budget plans for some company and then came knock off time and I drove home. I lived where I lived in my first year, it was a great place after all. I went to attend one of my classes because I was busy doing my masters part time meaning my classes were later in the day and I had 2 more hours until my next class. I called sunshine and she answered after a while. There's a boy she was dating now.

PC

Me: hey sunshine

Her: hey Red

Me: what are you doing?

Her: I'm doing good thanks Red and how are you?

Me: ok how are you? I'm good too thanks

She chuckled and so did I

Her: I'm sitting with Trey

Me: better not be doing things you shouldn't be

Her: like what Red

She laughed.

Me: oh God! This child. I mean no sex kid

Her: fine

Me: I'm serious. We don't need you getting pregnant now

She laughed

Her: whatever Red.... What's up?

Me: I miss you

Her: where's Miso?

Me: his father was shot so now he's visiting him

Her: that's sad. How bad is he?

Me: I haven't checked up on him yet. Figured he needs time with family

Her: that's thoughtful of you. Also explains why you called me cause your man aint here

Me: why do you gotta analyse everything?

Her: because I was born to be an analyst

Me: whatever. Listen there's someone at the door, I have to go

Her: really now?

Me: yes actually there is a knock

I said walking to the door. I opened the door and Miso was standing on the other side of it. He was yummy... as usual. He looked fresh like someone who had just taken a shower and he was wearing a vest that showed off his tattoos with loose joggers with a white sneaker.

Him: hey

Me: sunshine I have to go

Her: tell Miso I said Hi

Me: she says hi

He waved and I dropped the call

End Of PC

I bit my lower lip. God Damn he was sexy

Him: what time is your class?

Me: in half an hour

He nodded and walked in while I closed the door and followed him inside

Me: how is your father?

Him: hasn't woken up yet. He has a bullet stuck in his spinal cord

Me: I'm sorry

Him: yeah

Me: why aren't you at the hospital?

Him: I just needed to get away for a minute or two. It's depressing in there

Me: of cause. So you figured you'd come see me huh?

He gave that side smile making my insides tremble and my knees weak

Him: I like where your minds at

He said pulling my waist closer to him

Me: I'm drained

Him: you sure

He said kissing my neck. He knows how weak that makes me

Me: mmmh

Him: here or the lounge

Me: here!

He picked me up and put me on the counter making my skirt go up and stood between my legs

Him: hey beautiful

Me: hey handsome

Him: still as beautiful

Me: and you still as hands...

I moaned as he was playing with nookie.

Him: fuck!

He said kissing my neck and undoing my buttons

Me: you know I have to get to class right?

Him: I know

He pulled down my underwear still kissing my neck while I undid his pants and helped him pull them down. I still had the iud inserted. I pulled his face to mine and kissed him because at least with his lips I'm distracted from thinking about the pain between my legs. Ever since I started exercising its like Miso's dick gets bigger every time. The pain between my legs is never one I get used to even if we have sex two days in a row it's still painful. He pulled out and walked out to my bathroom and came back with a towel and wiped me there

Me: I'll never get used to you

He chuckled

Him: Bess men are packed honey

I laughed

Me: let's not get a big head now

Him: I'm just saying babe. IUD still in place?

Me: yeah still good

Him: we don't want you falling pregnant now

Me: I wouldn't afford a baby

He chuckled and kissed my forehead and picked me up to my room with my legs wrapped around his waist.

Me: don't drop me

Him: when have I ever?

Me: you really wanna go there?

We both laughed. At least he was laughing so that was good right? We had a quick shower and then he drove me to class while he headed to the hospital. He said he would keep me posted.

Chapter 26

My brother was in town and he actually called me to ask me out for lunch. I wonder what that's about because nigga doesn't call let alone text me or whatever. He just plays far from me ever since that incident and I don't get it at all. I sat down and he sat down opposite me

Him: how are you and how's the internship?

Me: I'm good and so is the internship. You?

Him: all is good. Listen I need help

Me: with?

Him: mom's birthday is coming up in a few days and I was hoping that you could help me plan it

Me: oh

Him: you in?

Me: she's my mother. Of cause I'm in

Him: great. So I've been talking to a few caterers and they made a few suggestions

He said handing me a file

Me: shouldn't we be discussing this with Craig and Sel?

Him: Craig said he will pay for everything and Sel is busy with school

Me: What's this really about Yonda? You never liked me from the get go and then suddenly you want us to organise Lala's birthday party together?

Him: I'm trying to make up for lost times ok.

Me: Why now Yonda? You wanted nothing to do with me and then suddenly you playing nice

Him: I don't know what you want me to say Yolanda

Me: an explanation maybe... that would be a good start

Him: fine I thought you being around would make mom love me less and that since you here you'd steal all the attention

I chuckled

Me: that's childish

Him: yeah I know. now that that's out of the way can we continue with the real reason I'm here

Me: sure why not

We finished discussing ideas and he said he would run them past Craig and Sel and then get back to me. When we were done I went back to work and he went back about his business. When I got to work Ester was sitting in the reception area, my

mood immediately went from a 100 to a -1. I walked towards the elevators and she shouted for my name and grabbed my arm. I looked at her hand on my wrist and back at her

Her: Yolanda please

Me: let go of me

Her: Lala please

Me: remove your hand before I call security

She let go of me

Me: now please leave. I want nothing to do with you

Her: Yolanda I'm sick

Me: good for you

I walked inside the elevator and closed the doors in her face. I was so angry all of a sudden. This woman made my life a living hell and then she thinks she can play the "I'm sick" card on me and expect things between us to be fine? No ways. It doesn't work like that not in this day and age. I got upstairs and went to the restroom to fix my face and also call Miso. Haven't heard from him since yesterday.

PC

Him: Buttercup

Me: Bubbles

Him: you ok?

Me: I should be asking you. How's your dad?

Him: he woke up and you can imagine how things are

Me: Nino knows?

Him: yep and she's not happy. All hell broke loose

Me: I'm sorry

Him: yeah I don't know what I was expecting from them

Me: babe

Him: yeah

Me: would be so bad for you to do the IT thing as a side hustle while you busy with your LS? Hear me out. You know your parents, I know your parents and after so many years in school with them paying cash. They won't let you do this IT you want so badly

Him: fine Buttercup

Me: thank you

Him: so what's going on with you?

Me: nothing

Him: try something else. What happened?

Me: Ester was here or is still here. I don't know

Him: and you don't want to at least know what she wants to say

I shook my head as if he could see me. he chuckled that lazy laugh of his

Him: did you just shake your head?

Me: yes

Him: this girl. So what did she want?

Me: I don't know. she just mentioned she was sick that's all

Him: babe

Me: I know what you going to say and no. I am not going to listen to whatever she has to say

Him: fine. I'll let you be for now

Me: just let me be. Bye babe I have to get back to work

Him: ok Buttercup. I love you

Me: love you too

End of PC

The Mason family was somewhat against my relationship with Miso because he's black. Well mom and dad, Yonda is just... I don't know, he doesn't care maybe and little bro was more

than happy to meet the man in my life but they have come to accept that I love him and I won't end things because of them as I am responsible for my own happiness. I got a text from Miso saying he would come over to my place later on. I went back to work and it was ok. Knock off time came and when I got to my door with my bottle of sweet white wine little sister was waiting for me

Her: hey

Me: hi

I unlocked and walked in and held the door open for her to walk in.

Me: to what do I owe this visit?

Her: you know why I'm here

Me: I wouldn't be asking if I knew Ivy

Her: mom came to see you and you brushed her off

I chuckled

Me: I have plans... if you don't mind

Her: Landa she's sick

Me: good for her

Her: Landa come on. She has womb cancer

Me: fine by me. If you don't mind I need to shower Miso will be here

Her: so you would choose to wine and dine with your boyfriend while your mother is sick and needs treatment

Me: you'll see yourself out

I said walking to my room because had I stayed and listened or responded to her I would have said shiit that was going to end our relationship. I took off my clothes and put on a black and red silk gown and tied my hair up and wore my sleepers and walked to the kitchen to pour myself a glass of wine, she was gone already. I poured my glass and as I was about to walk back there was a knock. I went to open and Miso was carrying paper bags with food, I found myself smiling and so did he.

Him: when you open the door looking like this I'm tempted to have you whatever way I want to

I giggled at how his eyes were filled with nothing but lust. I took one paper bag and kissed him and then went to put it on the table. I was about to turn when I felt him standing right behind me breathing down on my neck and his hands untying my robe

Him: hello sexy

He said rubbing my boobs making me wet instantly

Me: hi....

My voice came out as a whisper. He had me from behind on the kitchen counter and then we went to take a bath together. I was between his legs and his hand was playing with my clit as we were chatting about each other's day.

Me: Yaya should thank me for knocking some sense into you

He chuckled and stuck a finger making me scream and he laughed

Me: OUCH!

Him: choose your words wisely when my hand is there

Me: fuck you! That was painful

Him: I'm sorry

He said kissing my neck

Him: I'm really sorry

He traced wet kisses to my shoulder

Me: don't do that again

Him: I'll warn you next time ok

He bit me on my shoulder but it was a good sensation

Him: so you not ready to talk to Ester?

I shook my head

Me: maybe if things had gone differently I'd want to hear her out but they didn't and now she's using her sickness to get to me

Him: I hear you but would it be so bad if you heard her out

Me: I just don't want to hear shiit from her Miso. Can we just drop it now?

Him: sure

His hand was massaging my boobs doing the things

Him: let's get out of here

Me: sure

We got out and we helped dry each other went to lotion each other and then I wore his t-shirt and he wore my sweatpants and then we went to make something to eat for the both of us. We just sat and watched movies. My phone rang and it was mommy dearest

PC

Me: Mrs Mason

Her: so I should give up on the mom thing?

Me: yep. So what's up?

Her: I'm just checking up on my daughter that's all

Me: really now?

Her: stop being suspicious

Me: thing is we spoke earlier on and then suddenly you calling me now... you sure Ivy didn't call you?

Her: ok she did

Me: thought as much

Her: I'm not saying forgive her

just hear her out

Me: and then what?

Her: I don't know. take it from there

Me: have you heard her out? last time I checked you wanted nothing to do with her. you didn't talk to Ivy for a month

Her: I...

Me: exactly Lala. Let's let this go ok

Her: fine. At least do it for Ivy

Me: ey Ma let's just drop this ok

Her: ok bye baby. I love you

Me: bye Lala

End of PC

I don't know when I fell asleep but when I woke I was in bed with Miso's arms caging me tightly. It was cute how possessive he can get even in his sleep. I just planted a kiss on his lips and went back to sleep.

Things were good, they were normal for the next couple of days and the rest of the weeks that followed. It's been 4 months now since my encounter with Ester and she even has my number now and she won't stop calling me and I know her daughter is the one that gave her my number. I had just graduated and they threw a party for me and it was AWESOME. Mom's party went well too and Yonda's graduation was in two days' time. I was in New York because that's where his party was going to be held anyway. Miso and I were good, his father was attending physio and lucky him there was a chance that he could walk someday which was hella awesome news. Lately I've been feeling a little under the weather, by that I mean I've been moody, snapping at anyone or anybody, didn't eat much and just lost a lot of weight. I think its stress or something. at work I was no longer an intern which was great, I was on probation. If I do well then Toby's job was going to be mine because he was no longer going to work for that company. he was toning things down for himself so that he doesn't have a lot of work to do that he ends up not having a life. I had just finished puking the fruit salad I had for breakfast when Yonda walked into the guest bathroom

Him: you ok?

Me: I think I must have eaten expired fruit or something

Him: I bought that fruit an hour ago when I got out of the gym.
You pregnant sis!

Chapter 27

I rinsed my mouth and then spit the water out and wiped my mouth before attending to him. Twin had to be high on something. I am not pregnant. I can't possibly be anyway. I'm only 19 for heaven's sake and I might be hired to work permanently should I do my job well. Pregnancy is the last thing on my mind now.

Me: I'm not pregnant

I said laughing

Me: I have a loop

Him: no contraceptive is 100% sis

Me: even so but the IUD is safe

Him: at least take a test and see

Me: just to get you off my case I'll take a test

Him: come with me

I looked at him and then looked his hand

Him: come

Me: where are we going?

Him: to your room. I already bought you a test

I looked at him stunned. What did he mean?

Me: huh?

Him: When mom was pregnant with Sel she lost weight and had these sicknesses before she gained weight

Me: but I'm not pregnant

Him: just take the test

We walked into my room and it was in a paper bag on top of my bed. I went to my bathroom and took the test and then he set an alarm for 5 minutes. That was probably the most longest 5 minutes of my life.

Him: so what happens if you pregnant?

Me: I don't know

Him: I'll support you whatever decision you take

The alarm rang and we looked at each other. Tears were already threatening; I was shiit scared. Mom won't take this lying down. she won't accept things just like that. Yonda took the test and looked at it. I couldn't read his expression

Him: I'm sorry sis

I looked at him and he shrugged. I just knew I was preggies. Tears rolled down involuntary. He pulled me to his arms and let me cry

Me: how far?

Him: its written 15 weeks

I cried even more. How? I was on the loop though. He let me cry. When I woke up I was in bed and there was a small blanket over me. I looked for my phone and it was past 2 already, I had been sleeping for about 3 hours straight. I had a dozen missed calls, that's the thing about Miso, whenever I wasn't around he called a lot than he normally did. I called him back

PC

Him: Buttercup

Me: hey

Him: were you sleeping?

Me: I just work up

Him: you sleep a lot lately

Me: yeah I get tired a lot lately

Him: you sure it's just that?

I just kept quiet as tears made their way down to my pillow. I couldn't hold them back. Finding out that you pregnant at such an age is frustrating, its stressful even

Him: Buttercup talk to me please

I still didn't respond. I kept thinking about what Candice would say. As much as it may seem like I don't care or whatsoever but

I do value what she says and I'm not ready to see her disappointment in me.

Him: Buttercup please say something

I could hear the concern in his voice. He was worried. I just dropped the call

End of PC

I took a picture of the test and sent it to him as an MMS and he called instantly but I couldn't answer his call. I couldn't let myself answer him. I got up to wash my face and then went downstairs. Mom and Sel were sitting in the lounge with Yonda pressing his phone

Me: hey

Mom: hey sleepy head

I sat next to mom and snuggled myself under her arm. Yonda eyed me and then back to his phone. Just then his phone rang... knowing my boyfriend, he probably had Yonda's number because they got along in these four months or he hacked my stuff and took his number. Yes, he was studying and learning how to hack from his sister's fiancé and he was good at it.

Mom: you ok?

Me: I just miss being a mama's baby

She chuckled and rubbed my arm

Her: that's cute

Me: when are you going to Milan?

Her: next month

Yonda was talking on the phone and I'm certain he was talking to Miso because he would look at me every now and then, I pleaded with my eyes not to give me the phone. I would talk to the guy later

Her: why? Do you want to join me?

Me: I'd love to but I have work

Her: next time then

Me: yeah next time

Her: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine Mah

She didn't respond. Yonda said his goodbyes and then handed me his phone and he was busy chatting with Miso.

Mom: and then?

Me: what?

Her: since when do you two loan each other phones?

Me: mine is in my room Lala

She didn't say anything further. Miso was asking about what we going to do from here and I told him we would talk proper when I was back and he told me he would call me later then I should text him when I'm ready to talk and I didn't respond instead I returned the phone back to its owner. I watched tv with the family and then we had supper and then later went to bed. Mom walked in as I was changing into my pjays but I was standing in front of the mirror trying to see if there were any changes in my body and I couldn't see any

Her: Yolanda talk to me

Me: about?

I said wearing my pjays

Her: I'm not stupid nor am I blind to what happens under my roof

I looked at her confused

Her: tomorrow we going out. wake up and wash

I nodded and then she walked out. I got inside the covers and called Miso who answered same time

pC

Him: Buttercup

Me: hey

Him: you had me worried there

Me: what am I going to do with a baby Miso?

Him: I don't know but all I know is that it's our baby and I will be there with you every step of the way Buttercup

Me: how are you so calm with everything?

Him: because it's no use panicking over nothing. You pregnant and that's not going to change

Me: but I don't want a baby. I'm only 19

Advertisement

I'm not ready to be a mother

Him: and I'm not ready to be a father but we'll made do Buttercup. This baby changes nothing about how I feel about you and her

Me: what if it's a he

Him: nah it's a her. I just know it's a her

Me: whatever

Him: she'll look like her beautiful mother and have that cute red hair and small nose

I chuckled. Miso was being crazy

Him: she laughs

Me: I'm scared

Him: we'll figure things out

Me: ok

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: goodnight Buttercup

Me: night

End of PC

The next morning, I woke up at around 7 and showered and wore my pjays and went to make something to eat. Mom walked in as I was eating

Her: morning

Me: morning

There was silence and only bowls and spoons making noise.

Her: so you still don't want to talk to me?

Me: about?

Her: ok fine then.

Just then Craig and Sel walked in laughing. They greeted and went back to their debate

Mom: finish up so we can leave

I nodded and went to wash my dish and hers and then went up to my room. This was going to be hell. I was planning on leaving straight after the graduation party but I doubt I'll leave now. So we went to the doctor and the doc confirmed that I'm indeed 3 months and a few weeks preggies and I fell pregnant because seems like I forgot to go for my check up three months back and so it shifted or something but my pregnancy was ok as long as I stay away from stressors or anything that raises my pressure high but either than that my baby was healthy. Mom was quiet all the way home and I was texting with Miso telling him what went down

Her: want anything to eat?

Me: no thanks

Her: you have to eat something Yolanda. You eating for two now

Me: I'm really not hungry Mom

She nodded and passed by at some burger shop and bought burger meals and then we drove home. When we got home she headed straight to her room and her husband followed her. I was shocked to find him home seeing how he is hardly around.

Yonda: and?

Me: it's been confirmed

Him: I'm sorry

Me: yeah me too

Him: she'll come around, she's just disappointed that's all

Me: I hate myself for this

Him: at least you getting paid so that should count for something and Miso's moneyed

Me: I don't want Miso's money and I don't want to be dependent on him for this.

Him: so what now?

Me: I have no idea. I just want to cry myself to death

Him: pity it doesn't work like that

Me: I wish it did cause then I wouldn't have to deal with this when I wake up

I walked out to my room calling Miso. I needed him to feel everything I was feeling at this moment. I didn't make this baby alone after all. He answered after a while... when I was about to give up even.

PC

Him: hey Buttercup. Sorry I was driving

Me: its ok

Him: how are you today?

Me: I just sent you a picture of the sonar

Him: cool I'll check it out when I get home

Me: going to Yaya's?

Him: yep. Gotta tell her

Me: can't we at least wait before we tell her?

Him: she's going to find out one way or the other and I rather she finds out this way

Me: she's going to hate me

Him: she'll never hate you. I'm just hoping she won't disown me

Me: yeah. Aya will probably say I'm trying to trap you with a baby

Him: argh never mind Aya. I'm sorry Buttercup, I know you probably hate me or blame me and I'm sorry

Me: it's not your fault. I should have been more careful that's all

Him: you ok?

Me: I will be

Mom walked in and sat on the bed

Me: Bubbles I have to go

Him: I'm guessing that's mom

Me: yep. Bye

Him: I love you ok

Me: ok

End of PC

She was sitting at the edge of the bed while I sat on the other side.

Her: I am so disappointed in you Yolanda I don't even know what to say. Maybe if I was more present in your life things wouldn't have turned out the way they did now. I don't know. Maybe because you started having sex at an early age you thought that sex without protection was ok when it's not

I gave her a look. Now I know I was wrong for having sex without protection with Miso which was my choice but for her to use my past against me? that I cannot accept. I'm sorry but that's shade right there. Unnecessary shade even

Her: Lala I di...

Me: I'll leave your house in peace.

I got up and went to my closet

Her: Lala please

Me: I understand that I messed up. Having sex without a condom was my choice and it was my mistake and I'm paying for it with an unwanted and unplanned baby but for you to use what I went through as an excuse of me falling pregnant? That's low Candice even for you. I'll be out of your house before the end of today

Her: Yolanda I don't want you to leave. please don't leave and lets just talk about this

Me: there's nothing to talk about. I'm pregnant because in my mind I believe that its ok to have sex without protection

I hadn't stopped packing

Her: that is my grandchild you are carrying and I won't let you leave here with him or her. I know my approach was wrong because I was never trained for such myself seeing that I fell pregnant at around your age and I didn't have a mother to guide me or give me a talk or whatsoever. Lala I'm sorry for what I said but I won't apologise for everything else. I'm your mother and this, this was the last thing I expected from you and I won't applaud you for getting yourself knocked up. The baby is here, now what's the next step? Does Miso know?

Me: yes, he knows and he's willing to take responsibility

Her: ok that's good but I cannot have you depending on him. You still need to work and have your own things and be able to take care of your child

Me: I hear you

Her: good. And work? Wont you lose your internship?

Me: I might. One of the terms in the contract was that I don't get pregnant before I'm permanent

Her: well you might show later. So you can continue working until otherwise. You'll have to talk to your boss though just so that they are able to find a replacement for you

Me: ok

Her: you can always come and work for me or Craig if ever things don't work out where you are now

Me: I'm not moving to New York

Her: I'm not asking you Yolanda. You pregnant and I would like to have you close by

Me: and what about Miso? He's my child's father shouldn't he have a say in what happens with his child?

Her: who will take care of you in LA Yolanda?

Me: I've been doing fine all these years in LA. I will still be fine even with a belly

Her: fine. Be like that

Me: I don't ask you for anything. I have never asked you for anything thus far but please let me live my life as I was living it before you came into the picture. I love and respect you and I know I've disappointed you in the worst way but I won't be your prisoner and I won't live to be reminded that I'm a disappointment to you and your husband mom. I'm sorry but that's just me and the way I'm am.

Her: ok fine

Me: thank you

She looked at me once and then got up and left. Call me whatever name you feel like calling me but she ruined things the moment she brought up the way I grew up. I didn't ask to be raped at 10 years old and I never asked to be a sex slave to old men. As for Miso and I, I thought I had it covered but mistakes do happen and at the time there was that issue with Ester and I forgot about my check up and BJ (Bubbles/Buttercup Junior) was the result of my forgetfulness. It happens and I will love him or her no matter what the situation is.

Chapter 28

So I told my boss that I was preggies and to my surprise he was cool with it and he said I could continue with my job and I got hired permanently. Could life get any better? My brother's party was great and he and I were closer than ever, must be the baby growing inside of me. Mom called me every day to check on her grandchild and to make sure that I wasn't depressed or whatsoever. I was now 8 months preggies and Miso's family was more loving and welcomed me with open arms except Aya of cause, like I said, she said I was trying to trap Miso with a baby and wanted the Bess money. Miso was serious with school because now he had no choice but to finish his studies and get a well-paying job and be able to take care of his child. I didn't know the gender yet and I didn't want to know it. I had gotten myself with the help of my parents a 3-bedroom house in a nice neighbourhood and a stay in nanny. Yes, I was pregnant but I was not about to live with a boyfriend now. it just ruins things and I'm not ready for the constant fighting and stuff even though we've been arguing a lot lately. I don't know, I feel like he's distant from me. its December and soon I'll be leaving for Christmas. Ivy was here and we were sitting watching tv together.

Her: so how does it feel being pregnant?

Me: I'm enjoying it actually. I thought I'd be depressed and hate it but I'm loving it. Having to feel my little one kick, it's beautiful

Her: Lala

Me: yeah?

Her: please don't be mad

Me: when you start a sentence like that then best believe I will be mad

She played with her fingers

Me: Yvette what's going on?

Her: you need a nanny and Ester is available

I chuckled. She was joking right? That woman failed being a mother to me and her, what makes her think that she's going to be a good nanny to my child?

Her: hear me out please

I was looking at her waiting for an explanation or whatever bull that was going to come out of her mouth

Her: look she's taking her meds and the Chemo is working and she has changed for the better Lala. Please just give her a chance

Me: Ivy I'm pregnant and I don't want to pop early. Please leave before I say something that will ruin our sisterhood

Her: Red come on

Me: NO Yvette. That woman is the source of my pain, she broke me, she made me do despicable things with men old enough to be my father. She didn't give a damn how that made me feel just as long as she gets paid and we get to have food on the table. She wanted to pimp you out Yvette and because of me she didn't. she was willing to sell her own daughter just to get a few bucks but I begged her to use me instead. I can't believe you want me to forgive that woman. I cannot believe that you would want that woman to be my child's nanny. I will die before she goes anywhere near my baby. God you're unbelievable you know that? Maybe I should have just let her do as she pleased with you because then maybe you wouldn't be taking what I went through for you so lightly.

She was now in tears and I was breathing so heavily I even had a sharp pain in my heart. I feel like I sheltered Yvette so much to a point where she doesn't understand how life works. She wouldn't be the person she is now had I not sheltered her and protected her from her own mother. I should have let her be then maybe she wouldn't be speaking like this. so many times I have let Yvette walk all over me because she's younger than me and I wanted her to grow up differently from me but instead it made her a brat.

Her: so this is how you really feel?

Me: I used to ask myself every night why your mother hated me so much because I never did anything to her not even once. She used you to get to me she knew I wouldn't let her do anything to you. She knew that I would spare my life for you. Do you know that she once threatened to take you out of that boarding school? Did you know that Tobias had to pay her 200k just so she could leave you and I alone? Of course you wouldn't know because to you your mother is sick and her sickness suddenly makes her an angel.

Her: No. you lying. She would never

Me: so many nights she threatened to use you when I complained about being tired or whatsoever but she always knew in the back of her mind that she would never use her own daughter. You think I don't know that later on when she thought I was sleeping she would sneak into your room and feed you and tell you not to tell me?

She shook her head

Me: please just leave

She was crying uncontrollably and I had a few tears of my own. I got up and went to my room and locked my door and sat on the floor. When you've had enough, you've had enough. I was startled by my phone ringing and I knew very well that it was either mom or Miso's mom or Miso himself, they are the ones

that don't stop calling me. I didn't move an inch and little one couldn't stop kicking. I buried my face in my hands and just cried, I couldn't do this anymore, I've bottled up so much that I just can't anymore. In my crying I ended up sleeping on the floor and was woken up by Miso banging on my door such that I heard the key trying to push my key out of the key hole. I didn't respond

Him: Buttercup open this door

I kept still

Him: Baby Mama please just open

I couldn't help but giggle. That's what he called me sometimes and it always tickled me. I helped myself get up and then opened the door for him and he pulled me in for a bone crushing hug

Him: I've been worried sick. You weren't answering any of our calls. Your mom called me panicking and so did Yaya

Me: Miso I'm fine

I said struggling to get out of his arms and he let me.

Him: you've been crying. What's going on?

Me: Misokushle I'm fine!

I snapped and he raised an eyebrow. I was not about to apologise at all. He needs to stop fussing. I walked to the bed and he followed behind me like a lost puppy

Him: Buttercup talk to me please

Me: I feel like I'm losing you. I don't know to what or to who but you not here anymore. You not mine anymore

Him: Buttercup you'll never lose me

Me: then I must be seeing things or feeling things. You hardly ever call like you used to, you visit me once a day and that's it and when you here it's like you just here for the sex and then you leave. Is there someone else in your life Miso?

Him: what? NO. I'd never cheat on you Buttercup

Me: then? What's going on?

Him: I've just been caught up with work that's all. There is no other woman

Me: and the night you came here smelling of perfume?

Him: what?

Me: I love you but I cannot compete with a none pregnant girl who can do all the things I can't do in bed

Him: Buttercup there is no other woman. The other night I met up with Aya and her friend Kelly that's all. I would never disrespect you like that. You have to believe me

He was even pleading with his eyes. Maybe I'm overreacting. Whenever we spoke back when we were still trying to get to know each other he would tell me about the stuff his father put his mom through when they were still dating and he vowed to himself to never be like him. Derrick Bess used to be a player and even when he was with Miso's mom he cheated on her multiple times and Yaya forgave him multiple times. Miso begged me that if he ever cheated on me I shouldn't stay with him because he never wants to see me in that pain knowing that he was the one behind my tears.

Him: Buttercup I'm sorry. I'm sorry I've been distant, work has me by the balls but I promise you I'll make things right

I just nodded. He pulled my hands and then kissed my forehead.

Him: I'll make things right

He pulled me to his chest and God Damn his cologne was doing the things in all the wrong and right places. I pulled away from his chest and wrapped my arms around his neck pulling his face closer to mine

Me: I really want to have sex with you right now

He chuckled

Him: I'm loving pregnant Buttercup

I pulled his hair and he giggled and kissed me. Felt like I hadn't had him in ages and yet I saw this guy just yesterday. We made our way to bed and we did what lovers do and he cuddled me till I fell asleep.

Voice: if only you weren't this stubborn independent obsessed sexy mama I would pop the question right now but knowing you, you'll probably say no and I'm afraid of being rejected by you. I wouldn't be able to handle such from you.

I kept quiet. I wasn't dreaming at all, Miso was brushing my hair and talking to me thinking I'm asleep. Why would he want marriage now? We way too young and there's no rush.

Him: I love you so much and I would never do anything to jeopardise what you and I have. That night I came smelling of another woman is because Mia was helping me look for the perfect rock but I couldn't tell you that because knowing you(chuckles) you would probably throw a fit about that too.

He kissed the top of my head. This guy was doing the things. I was holding back tears because I didn't want him to know I was awake. So I kept quiet and listened but he didn't go on. Instead he tried to slide of the bed without alarming me and he succeeded. He walked out of the bedroom and I tried to go

back to sleep until he woke me up about an hour or two later with a plate of my fave. The smell was divine. My man can cook ya'll!

Chapter 29

2 YEARS LATER

I was now 21 and my little one was a year old and she was beautiful than the word beautiful. Ever since my break-out on Ivy our relationship has been on a steep slope and I won't lie it doesn't bother me at all, I tried to apologise to her but she shut me out. Miso and I broke up, nothing bad happened of such nature but we agreed to just end things and focus on our little one and we were better off that way and no little Kendra Iminathi is not the reason we broke up. I guess we just fell out of love if I could put it that way, but all I know is that I gave birth and for some reason I felt different about him. he's still my best friend and he still loves me like the day he fell in love with me but we just better off the way we are I guess. Mom was a great grandmother and so was Yaya and Boobie. What can I say, Kendra was loved by everyone... even Aya herself loved my daughter her brother's daughter. Miso and I had occasional sex and we were good like that. I've seen Ester around but I avoid her at all costs. My brothers were amazing uncles and they spoiled Kendra too damn much for my liking. She had just finished washing and we were waiting for her father to come and fetch her, she was a gifted child, she was already talking and yet she was only a year old. I loved how quick she grew up because then it made things easier for me.

Her: mom where's dad?

Me: he's on his way baby.

It was the weekend and we were going to Miso's parents' house for a braai

Advertisement

I don't even know what they were celebrating but all I know is that Miso told me wash and dress up and be ready by 1:40pm. Missy was getting a little impatient and I am to blame for that because I myself am a little impatient. We heard the car pull up and she ran outside

Me: hey no running

she didn't even hear me. I finished packing up the dishes and then a while later he walked in carrying his daughter. I swear to God this man looked yummy every time I saw him, it's like he's tryna get back at me for ending things between us by making sure that he looks all sorts of yum. He came to kiss my cheek

Him: hey Buttercup

Me: hi

I walked out and he followed me with Kendra still in his arms

Him: sorry I'm late I got held up

Me: yeah sure

Him: don't tell me you mad at me for being late by only two minutes

Me: I'm not

Him: you look gorgeous by the way

Me: and her perfume smells great on you

He kept quiet. I handed him Kendra's things and then took my handbag and followed him locking the house. I got inside in the front while he was strapping missy in her seat. He played music and we drove in silence

Him: it's nothing serious

Me: you don't owe me anything Miso

Him: you the mother of my child and my best friend Buttercup

Me: Miso, its ok that you seeing someone.

Him: oh

Me: so....?

Him: what?

Me: I want to know about her

Him: we not doing this Buttercup. We not going to discuss my sex life

Me: you said it yourself, I'm your best friend... might as well

Him: I wouldn't want to hear about the guy you busy with because it would be uncomfortable for me to listen

Me: you the only guy I'm busy with so...

Him: when you do get busy with another guy I don't want to hear how things are going because then it will make me jealous

I nodded and turned to look outside. I wasn't jealous... ok maybe I was. I ended things because I'm scared of commitment. When I gave birth to Kendra I went through a phase, I didn't want to see her let alone touch her for a whole week because I was scared that I might hurt her or something. they even recommended a therapist for me because I was so depressed and so scared. In that phase I ended things with Miso, I was terrified that I might become the mother Ester was to me. I wasn't hyped up at all that I gave birth to a baby girl because in the back of my mind I always hoped for a son but by God's grace I overcame it all and I love Kendra more than life itself.

Him: you know I still have that ring

Me: Miso...

Him: I love you Buttercup and what we had was special. You can't expect me to just get over you like that especially when we have a child together

Me: you'll meet someone who will be better than I ever was

Him: what if I don't want someone else? What if I want you and only you? You can't expect me to just move on just like that

Me: but you moving on by seeing other people

Him: she's not you. She'll never be you

Me: then stop looking for me in her and try knowing her proper without having to compare her to me

Him: let's just drop this please

Me: fine

I looked at my daughter who was busy playing with her teddy bear and talking to it. she was such a happy soul but also a cry baby. When she was still a baby she would cry to a point where I would cry too and nothing I did ever worked or would shut her up. I wouldn't have made it without mom and dad and even when I came back to LA Miso had to live with me because she was a handful and Miso was always able to calm her down more than me.

Him: she's beautiful

Me: yeah she is

Him: to think someone this perfect came from such dysfunctional people

Me: I'm not dysfunctional

Him: whatever makes you sleep at night Buttercup

Me: you lucky you driving otherwise I'd be all over you

Him: I can always stop the car

Me: sies you disgusting! That's not what I meant

He laughed

Me: always dirty minded yeses!

Him: what can I say, you bring out the dirt in me

I found myself laughing. This guy was something else. We parked in front of his parents' house and then we got off. I was wearing a white off shoulders maxi dress with a sandal and my hair hanging loose with no makeup at all not even lipstick. We walked in and went out back and the family was gathered around the pool. Yaya was wearing a bikini looking all kinds of sexy and her husband was wearing swimming trunks and he was sitting on the pool stairs. People here were just carefree and dressed up for the pool. Yaya came to hug me

Her: how are you?

Me: I'm good Mah and how are you?

Her: I'm good. Where's my grandbaby?

I turned behind me and they were not there

Me: they were right behind me with her father

Her: they must be somewhere in the house. You know where everything is

Me: yes Mah, thanks

Her: ok cool

With that she left me and I went to greet everyone. Kyle's wife was here together with Yanga's wife and they were sweetheart. Aya's husband was by the braai with MJ and Kyle. I went to sit next to Boobie. She was in her 80's or late 70's and she was still beautiful and a little aged.

Me: how are you?

Her: I'm good Buttercup and how are you? Where's my great grandchild?

Me: somewhere with her father or grandmother now. I don't know anymore

She chuckled

Her: I still don't understand why you and that boy don't get married and raise that child in a stable home

Me: come on Boobie we spoke about this

Her: I got married when I was your age

Me: Boobie times have changed. We all want different things

Her: that boy loves you

Me: I know he does and I love him too

Her: but?

Me: we want different things. I'm not up for marriage and I can't help but feel like if we got married it would ruin this relationship we have now

Her: that is childish and stupid. So what are these different things you want?

Me: you know.

Her: no I don't know. enlighten me please

I was saved by Kendra running to her Boobie all hyped up and excited wearing swimming costume. She looked adorable as always. They greeted each other and had a conversation just the two of them. I decided to go inside to get myself something to drink. Miso was on the phone and it was on loud speaker he was in the kitchen talking to some woman

Him: I told you I'll see you later

Her: don't bother. All you care about is your baby mama and daughter

Him: of cause. I told you from the get go that they were my main priority

She just dropped the call on him and he banged the kitchen counter. I walked in

Me: everything ok?

Him: yeah everything's fine

Me: you sure

Him: why can't we go back to the way we once were?

I shrugged

Me: we just can't. It's been a year now Miso. You have to move on

Him: I'll move on when you move on

Me: I'm better off the way things are Miso. I'm not ready to let a man into my daughter's life and have him mistreat her

Him: Buttercup you need to get help. It's not right that you live in such fear

Me: I'm not living in fear

Him: you don't want to let another man into your life because you scared that he might turn out to be a monster. You are scared that you might someday become an Ester to Kendra. It's not healthy for you or anyone around you

Me: I will be fine with time Miso. Thanks for the care

He brushed my shoulders and then walked out leaving me to do what I had come to do in the kitchen in the first place. I poured myself juice and then walked out to join everyone.

Chapter 30

I was at work doing something I love to bits. There was a knock on the door.

Me: come in

The person came in and sat down opposite me. my eyes were still glued on the screen

Me: how can I help you?

Person: Yolanda

I thought my ears were deceiving me, scratch that. They had to be deceiving me, I had to be hearing things. I didn't want to look up because then this voice I was hearing was going to be real and was going to be opposite me.

Her: please don't call security

I still didn't respond. Please understand that the sight of her, her voice and everything about her takes me back to a time where she had the upper hand in my life and she still haunts me. Seeing her haunts, me till today.

Her: Please

I raised my eyes slowly and looked up at her. for a sick person she looked pretty good, she was beautiful, she was the mother I once knew. The woman whom my father once adored more

than anything or led to believe he adored her before he lost his job and became a different man, a monster. She was always beautiful but the things people do will make a person seem ugly.

Me: what are you doing here?

I looked at my hands and they were shaking. My body was all tensed up and anger was building up

Her: I don't need you to say anything. I just want to apologise for everything I put you through. I have no reason as to why I treated you the way I did and for that I am truly sorry. if I could undo every terrible thing I put you through, I would but I can't. Yolanda I know that what I'm asking you is a lot and I know it wont take a day but I am asking you to find it in your heart to forgive me for every terrible thing I put you through. I love you and enjoy the rest of your day

With that she stood up and walked out without even giving me a chance to respond. I watched her walk away and then took my phone and dialled Miso's number which I knew by head and he answered after a while

PC

Him: Buttercup

Me: Miso I need you

Him: Buttercup what's wrong? Where are you?

I was even shaking; I could barely hold the phone. If someone saw me they would assume me to be a crack addict.

Me: I'm at work

I was even struggling to breathe. And Miso on the other hand was on panic mode, I could hear in his background that he was busy with something

Him: I'm on my way.

Me: please don't hang up

Him: I won't. Buttercup just breathe for me ok. I need you to breathe

I started doing breathing exercises and they were working slowly but surely and I could feel myself calming down a little. I'm not a pill person and my anti-anxiety and depression meds were never in my possession and I never finished them because I didn't want to depend on them and I felt like they were making me more depressed and unhappy so they stayed in the house.

Him: how are you now?

I didn't respond

Him: Buttercup say something

Me: I'm fine. I'm ok

Him: I'm almost there ok. just hang in there

I nodded as though he could see me

Him: remember the first time you said you love me

He laughed nervously making me date back to a time when I was extremely happy with Miso and there was no baby involved. I couldn't help but smile at the thought because after I told him I love him I clasped my mouth as though I said something I shouldn't have said

Me: yes, I remember

Him: you were so shocked to hear yourself saying those words. you were so adorable and my heart was on cloud 9 because the woman I love had just confessed her love for me even though she herself couldn't believe the words she had uttered to me. I remember she once said being loved and loving back is a shortcut to getting your heart broken and now I actually believe her

I smiled. I was no longer thinking about Ester or what she put me through but instead I was thinking about the good times I had with Miso.

Him: I'm in the elevator now. I'm ending the call ok?

Me: ok

End of PC

I was more calm and thinking about my life with Miso and how I was stupid to have ended things with him because he was perfect for me, nobody will ever understand me the way he does or did. He opened the door and I ran and threw myself in his arms. I needed his comfort, I needed to smell his scent against my nose, I needed to be in his strong muscled arms. He kissed the top of my head. I don't know where I would be without this man. When I met Toby I thought that he would be the one I run to whenever there was trouble or something troubling me but Miso came along and changed all of that and made me depend on him and now we have a little angel also dependent on him. Speaking of Toby, he up'd and left when he learnt of my pregnancy, he seemed disappointed and unhappy with me carrying another man's child. I think he was jealous or he had hoped that he and I would somehow end up together but I never loved Tobias more than a brotherly way

Advertisement

I may have had feelings for him but they died. We went to sit on the couch

Him: talk to me

He said looking at me

Me: Ester was here

Him: what did she want?

Me: to apologise. She apologised and then left

Him: Buttercup you need to find a way to heal from the things she put you through. You can't live in fear of her for the rest of your life, it's not healthy for you or our daughter

I kept quiet. Every time I have a breakdown he always says this. he always suggests therapy and I don't find talking about your childhood and stuff to a stranger helps you in anyway because at the end of the day they will put you on meds and probably have you admitted into psychiatric evaluation and that's it. nothing to make you feel any better.

Him: Buttercup please, at least do it for Imi, she needs this

I still didn't respond

Him: it pains me to see you like this Buttercup especially knowing that something can be done about this. Please just consider therapy ok?

I nodded. He pulled me to his arms and kissed my hair. This man loved me regardless of everything I put him through. Sometimes I wish I didn't love him and he didn't love me because then maybe I'd actually consider this whole therapy thing. Think about it, without Miso then I would have a real reason to attend therapy because I'd know that he's not available for me at all. He decided to call it a day for me and

opted that we go home and spend some time with our daughter. When I got home Ivy was there playing with her, the minute Imi saw her daddy she ran into his arms and he picked her up and kissed her all over making her giggle. I made my way to Ivy.

Me: Hi

Her: Hey

Me: what are you doing here?

Her: I came to see my niece and to see you

Me: oh

Her: Yolanda I'm sorry. Everything you said was true but I just didn't want to hear any of it. It's my fault you spent all those years suffering. Had I not been there then you wouldn't have had to live like that. You suffered all in the name of protecting me and for that I'm grateful but you don't have to protect me anymore, I'm giving you your freedom Lala. I love you so much and thank you for everything.

Me: Ivy what are you saying? What's the meaning of this?

Her: I'm leaving town

Me: to go where?

Her: I don't know yet

Me: and school? Yvette you can't just up and leave?

Her: don't worry about me Red, I'll be fine

Me: no Yvette you can't just leave. please don't leave. I'm begging you

Her: you have everything you've ever dreamed of, even if it came a little too early but you have it all and there's no room for me

Me: that's not true Ivy. There'll always be room for you

Her: I know that. I love you Lala. Take care ok?

She pulled me in for a hug and took her bag and walked out.
What the hell just happened?

.

.

5 YEARS LATER

I was now 26 and little Kendra Iminathi Graham Bess was now 6 years old and her father was 27 years old and in a serious relationship. Which meant no more fooling around together because missy was in the picture and he thinks he's in love with her and would want to settle down with her someday. We were officially co-parenting and it wasn't hard at all because we both wanted what was best for our daughter and Imi didn't like the

newly founded step mommy and I wont lie I didn't like her too, there was just something about her that didnt sit well with me. I on the other hand was also in a relationship with a guy named Triston, he was a great guy and there was nothing not to like about him... he was almost perfect. Miso didn't like him of cause. He felt the guy was too perfect for his liking and even when he tried digging he didn't find anything shady about him so to him that means something else. Kendra and I were chilling in the backyard in the pool as it was super hot today

"Knock knock"

Kendra: Daddy

She said running inside the house, she was still a daddy's little girl. He walked in carrying her.

Him: Buttercup

He never stopped and I think the girlfriend didn't like that he had a nick name for me and didn't have one for her. He put his daughter down and squatted next to me and kissed my cheek

Me: hey

He took his shoes off and dipped his feet inside the pool sitting next to me while Kendra played with water.

Me: to what do we owe this visit 2 days in a row?

Him: I uhhm Have some news to tell you

Me: oh?

Him: I proposed to Carly

Me: I hope she said yes

Him: she did... I wanted you to hear it from me

Me: I guess congratz is in order

Him: thanks. Are you ok though?

Me: about you marrying the woman you love? Of cause I'm ok
Miso

Him: you sure?

Me: of cause. She makes you happy and that's all that matters

Him: uhhm cool. Imi still doesn't like her though

Me: yeah well she'll learn to like her

He nodded. I don't know how I felt about Miso marrying that woman, she and I have had a few encounters and none of them were ever pleasant. According to her I was not over Miso and she was not going to let me win or have him. Funny cause I gave him the best gift any man could ever ask for so for her to think that I've lost is just bizarre.

Him: and you still don't like her?

Me: she hasn't given me reason to like her

Him: the baby mama never really does like the new woman

Me: I'm not your typical baby mama Miso. That woman hasn't given me reason to like and my daughter will never be left with her as long as I'm still alive

Him: Buttercup you not being fair. Carly is a part of my life and I would like her to be part of our daughters life too

Me: no. and that's the end of this discussion or whatever this is

Him: I am Iminathi's father, I have a say in my daughter's life

Me: I never said you don't. all I'm saying is that I don't trust that witch with my daughter and that's that

Him: I don't trust Triston with my daughter but I don't dictate your life choices

Me: Triston has not met Kendra yet

Him: I wouldn't know that

Me: Triston and I have only been together for 5 months. I wouldn't dare introduce him just yet

Him: Carly and I have been together for two years now Buttercup. Come on

Me: i'll go pack up her things and I want her back tomorrow before lunch

Him: you not being fair Yolanda

Me: whats not fair is you marrying a woman your daughter doesn't like. Think about that I got up and went inside. Miso and I were still good friends who spoke about anything and everything, the only time we didn't see eye to eye was when we spoke of this, our daughter and our partners. It was always world war 3.

Chapter 31

I was in my room taking my bikini off when Miso walked in. I quickly grabbed a towel

Him: nothing I haven't seen before Buttercup. When did you get the tattoo?

I had an anchor tattoo on my back below my neck with my daughter's birth date and her name below the anchor and I had another one of my wrist of our names, her and I. I had about 5 tattoos on my body.

Me: I got it last week

Him: looks good

Me: thanks. Could you please get out I'd like to get dressed?

Him: I've seen it all Buttercup and more

Me: Miso

He locked the door and walked up to me making me shiver, he was stripping his clothes as he was making his way to me. Why did he have this kind of effect on me still? He pulled me by my waist and my towel fell exposing my naked body.

Him: you'll always be mine

Me: you engaged

Him: so?

He kissed my neck while his hand grabbed my ass and squeezed it sending impulses down to the bottom of my spine. Damn I hate this man but I love him... does that make any sense

Me: this is wrong

Him: which part?

He was massaging my boobs with his other hand while tracing wet kisses from my jaw line to my lips. I let out a moan and he smiled

Him: you see what I mean? You'll always be mine Buttercup

I couldn't help but wrap my arms around his neck and respond to his kiss. He picked me up and took me to bed and got on top of me not breaking the kiss and then he traced wet kisses down to my belly button and all the way to my nookie where he flickered his tongue over my clit sending chills down to my spine. God Triston could never do me the way Miso does me and he is not as packed as Miso. He made me orgasm and then he went on to insert himself, God I had forgotten how big this guy was and right now he was something I had last had 2 years ago before Carly came in the picture. We had a steamy session and then I went to shower and as you can guess, he showered with me. I was about to speak but he put his finger on my lips shutting me up

Him: I know what you going to say and don't. just don't ok

Me: this is wrong

Him: that's not what you were saying when I was inches deep inside of you

I hit him and he laughed.

Him: Leave him Buttercup and I'll leave her

Me: no. Change is good Miso

Him: not this kind of change. You and I will always have this kind of connection. You don't love him the way you love me and you never will

Me: no Miso

Him: We both know that I make you happy, I made you happy and I will always be the one for you

Somehow he was telling the truth but I didn't want to admit it. I didn't want to admit it to him or myself because then I'd be letting myself vulnerable to heart break. See with Triston I have let him into my life but he's not close to my heart, I don't let anyone get that close. I don't have room for another man in my heart, I'm scared that I'll let a man into my life and he'll end up hurting my baby. I didn't respond and just let him be. I got out and dried my body and he walked out and dried himself too and then we made our way out to the room and lotioned our bodies and I wore loose shorts and an oversized crop top which

really don't show much with flip flops and he wore what he was wearing before. I went to pack an overnight bag for Imi and then he took it and we walked down

Him: don't forget to get buy the morning after pill

Me: trust me I won't. Don't want another reminder of you

He chuckled

Him: I wouldn't mind an MJ

Me: well I don't want one.

We headed downstairs and our daughter was in the lounge playing with her nanny.

Him: ready to go?

Her: we going to visit Nino?

Him: we'll also visit her before we go home

Her: is Carly going to be there?

He looked at me first and I shrugged. He knows so why look at me?

Him: yes, she'll be there

Her: I don't want to go to her

Me: why?

Her: I don't like her

Him: give her a chance

Me: I'm sure she's nice

She shook her head and I shrugged

Him: let's go get ice cream and go visit Nino and granpa

She smiled excitedly. They left and I helped her nanny pack up her toys. When we were done I drove to the pharmacy for the pill. I wonder why I trusted Miso so damn much to have sex with him knowing that he had a girlfriend and they were probably having unprotected sex. When I was done drinking the pill I called Triston

PC

Him: hey beautiful

I giggled nervously. Maybe it's because of the guilt of sleeping with Miso.

Me: hey handsome what are you doing?

Him: I just got off of work

Advertisement

what's up?

Me: you still coming over today?

Him: something c...

Me: its fine

Him: come on babe don't be like that

Me: no its cool, I see you some other time

Him: Babe

Me: Bye Tris

Him: Yo...

End Of PC

I ended the call and passed by the shop to buy wine and a few things for the house. I got home and prepared sandwiches and just as I was busy I got a call from Kendra. Yes she had a phone... courtesy of my mom and step dad, they got her a Samsung S-something, all I know is that its big. She was video calling me.

PC

Me: hey baby girl

Her: hey mommy. Look I'm with Yaya

Yaya: hey Buttercup

Me: hey Yaya. how are you Mah?

Her: good honey and how are you?

Me: also good Mah. What are two doing?

Imi: we eating meat. Grandpa came back with meat

Me: from?

Yaya: some house party he was invited to. I didn't want to attend it

Imi: it's very nice mummy

Me: then you should bring me some too

Yaya: hahaha we'll save you some if you promise to come visit. You don't visit us anymore

Me: I'm giving you time with your new daughter in law

She laughed

Her: I love your sarcasm. Your daughter doesn't like her

Me: I don't know why

Her: she doesn't give anyone reason to like her. Aya is the only person in this house she gets along with

Me: ouch. Mah I have to go, there's someone at the door

Her: ok baby bye

Me: tell that one I said I'll call her later

Her: will do

End of PC

I went to get the door and mom was standing there looking all kinds of classy with a paper bag in her hand which I'm certain had something for Kendra.

Me: mom

I hugged her and she returned the hug

Her: hello baby how are you?

We broke the hug and then she walked in while I closed the bugler

Me: I'm good mom and how are you?

Her: also good. Where's my grandbaby?

Me: you should call her and find out

Her: very funny Landa. Where is she?

Me: she's at her other grandparents

Her: oh... I got this for her

Me: and what's that?

Her: just a few things from my travels

Me: and what about me?

Her: what about you?

Me: she has a closet of her own in 4 different houses mom. she has enough clothes

Her: so? A girl can never have too many clothes

Me: fine whatever. Spoil her all you want but I won't be held responsible for her spoiled brat tendencies

Her: nah my grandbaby will never be spoiled

Me: whatever you say mom. So either than Kendra, what brings you to town?

Her: I just landed and I wanted to take you guys out but since she's not here let's make it a spa day

Me: great. Let's go

She looked at me from head to toe and then shook her head

Me: what?

Her: I'm not going anywhere with you looking like that

Me: what?

Her: I love you baby but I have a rep to uphold

Me: ouch! and I here I was thinking I was loved more than some reputation

Her: I do love you more but baby come on be realistic now

Me: fine I'll go change

I went upstairs and took out boyfriend jeans and wore them and tied up my hair more neatly and then went downstairs. I wasn't changing my top and flip flops

Her: really Yolanda?

Me: we either leave with me looking like this or we don't go at all

Her: you are my most disrespectful child ever

Me: and you love me the most

She just chuckled and we walked outside to her car, I didn't lock because Imi's nanny was somewhere around the house. She was a live in nanny after all. Mom was driving a red Ferrari. My jaw dropped. I know she hired it but GOD DAMN??? Really?

Her: you coming?

I opened the door and got in and then looked at her as she started the engine

Me: since when do you rent a Ferrari?

Her: since I want to

Me: everything ok with step daddy?

Her: yep

Me: liar!

Her: I think he's cheating on me

Me: he would never

Her: yeah that's what I thought too

Me: I'm sure it's nothing like that mom. that man adores you

Her: and the late secretive phone calls? How do you explain that Landa?

Me: Lala I think you overreacting. It's probably work stuff

Her: I truly hope so for his sake

Me: yoh I wonder.

We parked in front of the mall and made our way to the spa. When we were done I was relaxed and feeling lighter and happier and glowy. My mother knew just what I needed. We walked to some boutique and she made me try on a few outfits and those that I liked she paid for and some she got for free in other stores because she is those certain stores buyer. By the time we drove home I was no longer dressed the way I was before. I was wearing a heel and a shirt tucked in. she drove off to Yaya's house.

Me: I thought we were going to my place

Her: after I see my grandchild

Me: can I at least call her and find out where she is?

Her: sure go ahead

PC

Me: hey Miso

Person: this is Carly. Imi is here, what do you want?

Me: never mind.

***End of PC**

I dropped the call. This girl was annoying to the core. I told mom where the little one was hoping she wouldn't go there but mom is mom and she drove straight to Miso's place. She's been there a few times before.

Her: I want her to see just how good you look

Me: mom come on

Her: I'm not going to miss seeing my granddaughter because of her now

Me: fine

I raised up my hands in surrender and we parked in front of Miso's beautiful house. The security there was super tight, you could tell the owner did IT and Land Surveying (architect vibes). We both got off and headed to the door.

Chapter 32

Mom can be a dramatic person when she wants too, some might even go as far as calling her crazy... I see where I get the crazy from. She was walking in front with her chest out and tummy in., damn mom was aging well I'm jealous. In town people that knew her would ask if we were sisters or not... imagine! The door was open, probably because of the heat and the trellidor was closed. In the kitchen was no one. Mom knocked and no one responded and then she opened the trellidor and went inside shouting for Miso and Kendra, I literally banged my hand against my forehead. I closed the gate and walked in after her.

Mom: Miso! Kendra!

Me: this is trespassing you know that?

Her: Miso is more or less my son in law chill

Carly walked in wearing short shorts and flip flops and a crop top. She had a model looking body and she was also an IT wiz. They met when Click (Aya's husband) was teaching Miso how to hack and stuff and they fell for each other or whatever... I don't really care.

Carly: Who are you? And what are you people doing in my house?

Mom: your house? Child do you have any idea who you are talking to?

Her: would I ask if I did? This is trespassing. I could have you arrested for this

Me: Carly this is my mother Candice, she's Kendra's grandmother who refuses to leave town without seeing her granddaughter. Now please point us to my daughter

Carly looked at me

Mom: eyes over here child. Where are they?

Carly just folded her arms with attitude and mom pushed her aside and went in further shouting for Miso and Kendra.

Carly: you!

Me: look my mother has a mind of her own and I would suggest that you stay out of her way

Her: in whose house?

Me: in my daughter's house. So please

Her: your daughter's house?

Me: if anyone here is trespassing, it's you.

I pushed her aside and made my way to the backyard. My daughter loves being outside and I'm pretty certain that's

where they were. I walked in and she was with her grandmother chatting up a storm

Him: buttercup

Imi: mommy

I waved and she waved back. Miso was literally drooling over me... Where was that bitch to witness this?

Me: shift over I wanna sit

Him: come on don't start drama

Me: me? start drama? You have me confused with your future wifey

He chuckled and moved over making room for me on the pool chair.

Him: you look stunning Buttercup... as always

Me: I live to look stunning

He chuckled and I found myself laughing too until we heard a throat clearing and we both looked up and noticed Carly holding drinks in her hands

Her: would you like something to drink buttercup?

Me: no thank you. I rather die of thirst

Miso pinched me and I gave him a death stare

Him: I'd like some

Her: you can get one yourself

She said banging the tray on the small table and storming inside

Me: you're in trouble

Him: she's being dramatic

Me: yeah well you better go after her. I don't wanna be the reason you lost the love of your life

He chuckled

Him: you the only one I run after

Me: flattery won't fix your... whatever you two call what you doing. Go

Advertisement

Kendra will be fine

Him: she and I will talk later. For now, I'm admiring how hot and beautiful and sexy my baby mama looks

Me: stop tripping and go

He got up laughing and went inside. I watched my baby girl splashing her grandmother with water and grandma laughing and so happy and carefree. I couldn't help but steal a few shorts of them. I posted them on my insta. I left my phone on

the seat and went to join them. By the time Miso and Carly were back mom and I were as wet as Kendra and we didn't mind.

Kendra: Grandma am I going with you?

We were all sitting in the lounge

Mom: next time baby. I have to fly back to New York

Me: honey we agreed that you would visit daddy today

Imi: but I want to go with you and grandma

Me: Imi we bought you clothes and toys to play with so that you wouldn't do this. Can we not do this whatever this is baby?

Please

I begged

Miso: We going to go eat out and then we'll go and play in the park tomorrow morning and have fun. Don't you want to have fun with daddy?

Her: I want to have fun with daddy and mommy like we did today

Carly gave Miso a death stare and I just rolled my eyes. She was overthinking nothing. Miso didn't pay her any attention, instead he was focused on begging his daughter to stay with them for the rest of the night

Carly: ok

Miso picked her up and kissed her countless times. We took the time to escape them while she was too busy laughing to even notice us. We got in the car and drove off

Mom: Why doesn't she like the step monster?

Me: I don't know why. She just doesn't like her; she's never reported anything bad about her to me so I don't know

Her: how do you feel about the love of your life marrying such a woman?

Me: does it matter?

Her: the guy is sleeping with you while he is engaged to be married to her. so yes it matters

Me: it was a mistake which won't happen again

Her: that's what we all say honey

Me: mmmh...

Her: love is love honey. You love him and he loves you and as long as this love you two share is still there, then you two will keep having these episodes

Me: I don't want to love Miso

Her: why?

Me: I don't know Mah. There's nothing wrong with loving him or anything but I just want to live my life without being dependent on him

Her: you two aren't together and he proposed to some chick but he still comes through for you

Me: maybe I should leave town then

Her: and that's supposed to do what maybe?

Me: mom I don't know. Maybe make him forget about me and me forget about him... I don't know mom

Her: but you can't take Kendra away from her father

Me: I don't want to take her away from him but mom

Her: fine. Do what makes you happy. You have a life here; do you really want to start a new one elsewhere? I mean you have it all and starting over, is it really what you want to do when everyone you and Kendra love are here? Think about your daughter and how crushed she'd be to leave her father behind. And even so, do you really think that Miso would let you leave with her daughter?

Me: I don't know mom

Her: he wouldn't even fight you, he'd follow you to the ends of the world for his daughter and you I nodded... We got to my place and she dropped me off with my stuff and then she drove

off. I don't know if you've noticed but I'm not big on friends especially now that I have Kendra. Ari has a life of her own and so does my sister whom I never see and then there's Mia's who's a princess and is always busy... My varsity friends which I acquired from Mia were left in varsity so yeah... I don't have a social life. I got inside and ate my leftovers and then threw myself in front of the tv and pressed my phone with a glass of red wine. Just then I got a text from Miso's which read: "Listen Buttercup it's no secret that you and I love each other but I think it's time you and I stuck to nothing but co-parenting and being good parents to our daughter. It's nothing personal but after today I just want to focus on my relationship with Carly and make things work. After all she is my fiancé and I hate seeing her unhappy because of the relationship we share. Bye" I chuckled. This was a joke right? He came onto me and not the other way round. I was so pissed that he would send me such. I sent him my own text which read "Nothing personal? Nigga you the one that came onto me and not the other way round. You wanna focus on your bitch? Fine, stop screwing me and focus on her as you want to. have a nice life and let this be the last time you do this and let our daughter be the only thing we ever talk about or connects us." I pressed the send button and threw my phone on the other couch. I was borderline pissed. How dare he? Over text even?

Chapter 33

As I was sitting like that there was a knock on the door, I was hesitant but I got up to open and on the other side of the door was Triston. I stood aside for him and he walked in and headed to the lounge. When I got there he was drinking my glass of wine.

Him: Hey

Me: hi

Him: I was here earlier on

Me: I went out with my mom

Him: I didn't know she was in town

Me: was a surprise

Him: Are you seeing your ex?

I looked at him with a raised eyebrow

Him: it's a simple question Yolanda

Me: look I'm not in the mood for this.

Him: it's the only explanation I could come up with for you acting the way you did earlier on

Me: huh?

I was so confused it's not even funny.

Him: one minute we good and then suddenly you acting some type of way

Me: get out.

Him: what?

Me: leave my house

Him: you overreacting

Me: I am asking you to please leave my house

Him: ok I'm sorry. just that a friend of mine mentioned he saw Miso at your work the other day

Me: he's my daughter's father. Of cause he's going to drop by

Him: I know. I'm sorry. come here

He said with his hand held out to me and I just looked at it and grabbed the remote and changed the channel. He knows I don't roll like that... ok maybe I'm still mad about the text Miso sent me. he got up and next thing I know it nigga is between my legs taking my pants off.

Me: NO!

Him: babe come on

Me: I'm not in the mood

Him: babe I'm sorry

Me: and I forgive you but I'm not in the mood for sex

He raised his hands up in surrender and moved my legs and put them on top of him

Him: Landa talk to me

Me: about?

Him: what's going on?

Me: nothing

Him: no that's not true

Me: oh well believe whatever you want to believe

Him: I'll see you around

He got up and walked away. If he wanted to sulk then he can go ahead and sulk, I aint goin beg my daughter and then come back and beg a grown ass man. He banged the door and I got up to lock the house and went back to watching my tv and reality shows until mom called to tell me she was home safe. I was about to go upstairs when the was a banging on the door. I got up and dragged my feet to whoever was tryna break my door down. to my surprise it was the witch herself.

Me: what do you want?

Her: you gonna let me in or what?

Me: unless you here about my daughter, no.

She looked at me from head to toe and back up with disgust

Me: BYE!

Her: you bitch!

Me: excuse me?

Her: are you incapable of closing your legs to an engaged man?
Why the hell can't you stay away from him?

Me: when he stops being my daughters father I'll stay away.
Until then... sorry

Her: you better be grateful there's this bugler between us

Me: or what?

Her: open and I'll show you

I unlocked the bugler and let her in and first thing she did was to slap me. I looked at her. I don't know who you are but a slap will piss anyone off. Now ya'll know I can fight for myself and beat the shiit out of this bitch but I won't.

Me: you done?

Her: oh so now you don't know what to say?

Me: I could beat the shiit out of you but you are getting married in 2 weeks' time and for your sake I really want you to look....
ok on your wedding day with good pictures next to the

handsome Misokuhle. Now if you done you can see yourself out

Her: I'm done

Me: the door is right behind you honey

Her: no. I mean I'm done with you. I'm done with Miso. I ju... I just can't do this anymore. I can't compete with you and today hit the nail on the head. Have a nice life

She took the ring off and placed it on the kitchen counter.

Her: you'll give it to Miso when you see him.

With that she turned on her heels and walked out. She seemed serious and done I guess. I think it's safe to say I'm a homewrecker... the one thing I never thought I'd be. I was sad for her, I hate that I would put someone in that position. So she's the one that me the text cause I then she wouldn't have come here if she wasn't the one to send it. Miso wouldn't be so tacky. I just sat down regretting what I had put Carly through. Maybe it was time I really cut ties with Miso and stayed away from him and let him live his life the way he wants to.

The next day I woke up early and went to Miso's house with the ring. I parked my car and went to knock, I know he's exercising at this time and Imi is sleeping and will be sleeping for the next hour. He opened the door dripping sweat topless. I bit my lip involuntary. He was so hot you guys. I cleared my throat.

Me: hi

Him: hey

He stepped aside and let me in

I led the way to the pool area.

Me: Carly came to see me last night

Him: I saw the message she sent you and the one you sent back. I cannot believe that you would think that I would do something like that over a text. I thought you knew me Yolanda

I kept quiet. He was borderline mad, I think he was mad at me and at everything that happened. I attempted to speak but he raised his hand making me shut up as he was not done talking.

Him: we have a 6-year-old daughter together and I've known you for 9 years now and same goes for you me. I'd think that you'd know me by now but clearly you don't. When have you known me to say such things via a text message huh?

Me: I thought that you were the one that sent it

Him: even if that's what you thought Yolanda, you know Carly has access to my phone and for you to put it so bluntly that we had sex... see that right there

Me: I didn't not ask you to have sex with me Miso. You the one that came onto me

Him: because no matter how hard I try to stay away from you, I just can't. Carly left me

Me: I'm sorry. she said to give you this

Him: I should be hurting and begging her to come back but I can't. All I can think about is yesterday's session. This hold you have over me Yolanda. It's not right, it's not normal and as long as you are in my life the way you are I will never find love. I will never be in a stable relationship because you are who I live for. I can't convince you to be with me and knowing that you don't want to be with me tears me apart so to make things easier for both of us. I'm leaving

Me: What?

Him: Carly leaving gave me time to reflect on my life and everything and me leaving is for the best

Me: and what about your daughter?

Him: she'll fly to me every holiday and I will come visit her every one weekend a month

I didn't say anything. I couldn't say anything. I was dumbstruck, how could he? I get it he's hurting but for him to just up and leave? that's... that's not fair. Its huge!

Me: I....

Him: I've already found a job in South Africa and I'll be starting next month

I kept quiet still not knowing what to say. SA is 28 flipping hours away. What does her mean he will visit every one weekend a month? I swallowed the lump on my throat.

Chapter 34

Nothing I said made him stay. It's been a month since he left and he calls his daughter every day to check up on her and when I call him it has to be about Imi or else the call is cut short. I laid my heart out on my sleeves for him and he wasn't bothered at all, he said this was what was best for him and I and that I could get to focus on my relationship with Triston and he will try to find himself. Never in my life have I ever been this heartbroken but I guess there was nothing I could do about it at all. I was miserable but what was I to do really? I had made a friend in this period of my loneliness, some woman named Marcy Oyiyo, she was from Nigeria but she finished her degree this side. I don't know we just clicked from the get go. She also has a daughter my age and she is married to a sales rep of some sort. It was a Saturday and we were meeting up for drinks. Triston and I have been good, we've grown closer I guess but he still hasn't been introduced to my daughter and he's been pressurising me to make an intro. I sat down opposite Marcy

Her: as beautiful as you are

you seem stressed

Me: that obvious huh?

Her: pretty much

She had already ordered for us a bottle of wine. I downed my glass at one go the minute I sat down

Her: talk to me, what's going on?

Me: Triston insists on meeting Kendra

Her: and you don't want him to just yet?

Me: no. my daughter is my life and Triston is just a part of my life you know. he and I have only been together for 6 months and me introducing the two of them would feel like I'm rushing into things. Kendra's father left a month ago and for me to be coming to her and trying to introduce another father figure when she already has one... it's just too quick you know

Her: I won't lie I don't know what you going through but as a mother and parent I do hear you. Introducing your girl child to your new partner can't possibly be easy with all these stories about step fathers and boyfriends and stuff circulating today. You want what's best and at the same time you can't force yourself to introduce the two of them all because he is ready to meet her. you as the parent need to think of your daughter and you need to be certain that this man is the one you want to keep in your life because now what happens when you and him break up? 6 months is too little of a time for you to rush into introductions and if Triston had a child of his own he would understand that

Me: thanks babe

Her: stop stressing over this. he either understands and see things from your view or take the highway

Me: and I don't mind kicking him in the curve. I don't need this. I didn't sign up for this

Her: of cause you didn't

Me: enough with my drama. What's new with you? You've been drinking like a fish ever since I sat down

Her: yesterday a young lady around 21 rocked up in my house with a new born baby claiming its Chris's

Me: I'm sorry what?

Her: he didn't deny it. said he's known from since she was pregnant and he would like me to take in the child as my own and mother it because he wants his children under the same roof

Me: and here I was thinking I have real problems. So what did you decide?

Her: I can't raise another woman's child. I know I wouldn't want another woman doing my job for me

Me: where is the girl now?

Her: don't know and don't care. They can play happy family for all I care. I am not cut out to be a step mom Landa. I just can't. I didn't even want to go near the baby she was carrying. I took my things and left

Her daughter slept over at my place last night... she's been here the whole week actually and I'm ok with that because her daughter is a humble angel.

Me: I am the last person to give advice in this situation but you're an amazing person Marcy and I think you can do it. I mean you've been with Chris for so long and to throw it all away all because of this

Her: this is a lot Landa. It's too much to take in. If you were in my shoes what were you going to do?

Me: remember we are two different people. If I were you I would pack up my things and leave because I can never be someone's step mother. What if I mistreat the child unintentionally or the child feels like I'm treating him or her unfairly compared to my own. I mean there's a lot you ought to consider in your situation and also you don't want to throw all those years away

Her: clearly he didn't think of those years when he was inches deep inside of her without a condom

Me: did you at least let him explain?

Her: explain why he was unable to keep his dick inside his pants? I'm not an idiot Landa

Me: I'm sorry my friend

Her: what can one do anyway?

Me: ok so we need to get your mind off of this so I'm thinking we pack an overnight bag and fly to New York. We'll be back Monday morning

Her: and the kids?

Me: I have a stay in nanny so shouldn't be a problem

Her: seems like something you've been wanting to do in ages

I chuckled because it was something I've been wanting to do but I didn't have a person to go with

Me: yeah well

She laughed

Her: then let's go pack

Me: after this glass

I said finishing the rest of my glass and hailed a waiter over. I paid and then we went to our houses separately. When I walked in the kids were playing in the pool splashing each other looking all kinds of cute. I greeted and then went up to my room and on the way I called Triston

PC

Him: beautiful

Me: I'm going to NY for the weekend and I'll be back Monday morning

Him: you asking me or telling me?

Me: should I be asking you?

Him: Yolanda you my girlfriend. You can't just up and leave whenever you feel like it

Me: we not married Triston. Me telling you was to just inform you that I won't be available that's all

Him: you not being fair Yolanda. Is this because of yesterday

Me: not at all. Bye Triston

Him: Landa come on. What about the plans I made for us?

Me: I'm sorry, we'll have to postpone for next time

End of Pc

He just dropped the call on me and I was not going to beg him. I am sorry but I don't play like that and he knows it. Just as I was packing a call came through, I thought it was Triston but it was Toby. I was shocked to see his name pop up on my screen because well... I haven't seen the guy in ages

PC

Him: Red

Me: Tobias

Him: how are you?

Me: I'm ok and how are you?

Him: I'm good. Been ages

Me: yeah well you just up'd and left with no reason or whatsoever

Him: I had to. I couldn't watch you carry another man's baby
Red

Me: oh

Him: yeah. But that's all in the past now, I'm engaged

Me: wow that's great news. That's good to hear

Him: yeah and the wedding is next weekend. She and I met when I left LA

Me: wow. I'm happy for you

Him: thank you. I'd really like for you to come

Me: my details haven't changed so you'll email me the invitation

Him: thank you. Have you spoken to sunshine?

Me: no. why?

Him: you should call her

Me: I don't have her number. She cut all ties with me when she left

Him: she should be in LA. She said she was there when we spoke

Me: she hasn't dropped by

Him: oh... She's your little sister red

Me: I know

Him: she still needs you

Me: if she needed me then she would have visited me

Him: Red

Me: Toby please don't

Him: fine. How's the little one?

Me: growing. Beautiful. lovely... she's everything

Him: I can imagine. I'll talk to you again ok

Me: yeah sure. Thanks for the call

Him: of cause. Bye Red and greet the little one for me

Me: will do

End of PC

I still couldn't believe that Toby had called me. and he was getting married. Who would have thought? No not in that way but who would have thought that he kept my number all these years and never thought to use it. I was startled by my baby hugging my legs dripping wet.

Her: mommy

Me: hey honey

Her: where are we going?

I chuckled at the we part because I know how much she enjoys travelling

Me: mommy is going to New York

Her: without me?

Me: yes

Her: and where will I go?

Me: you can stay here with Becky

Her: can't I go to Yaya instead?

Me: and what about Peggy?

Her: she can come with. Yaya won't mind

Me: we will have to call Yaya first and find out what she thinks

Her: fine. Call her now

I dialled Yaya's number and she was ok to babysit her granddaughter and her friend. I ended the call

Her: I told you

Me: yeah whatever smarty. You can go now

Her: daddy is on his way

Me: what are you talking about?

Her: he said he's coming to see me

Me: oh that's good. I'm sure you can't wait to see him

Her: he says he wants to take us out. how will daddy take us out if you in New York?

Me: I guess we'll have to go out some other time

Her: I guess

Me: don't sulk you look like a dog

She laughed and so did I. What game was Miso playing at?

Chapter 35

The girls cleaned up and I drove us to Yaya's house calling Marcy to tell her to meet at the airport instead. I got there and parked and went inside and Yaya was in the kitchen preparing something. it smelt good that's for sure. Kendra was the first one in and her friend was right behind her, when I got in the girls weren't in the kitchen anymore

Me: Mah

We shared a hug

Her: hello my baby

We broke it

Me: how are you? You look good as always

She giggled and looked at herself

Her: thank you. I try. I'm good nana and how are you?

Me: also good

Her: you look great by the way. I see this... whatever you and Miso are doing or were doing has left you with this beautiful glow up

I chuckled. This woman and her not so funny jokes

Me: oh come on Mah

Her: I still believe that the two of you will someday end up together and live happily ever after

Me: does happy ever after really exist nowadays

Her: I'm happy

Me: and I'm single and happy

Her: not really convincing. What's going on?

Me: nothing Yaya

Her: you know you don't fool me

Me: feels weird talking to you about this

Her: come on

Me: my boyfriend wants to meet Kendra

Her: and you don't want him to?

Me: it's not that I don't want him to, but I feel like it's way too soon to be doing that. Kendra has a father and she doesn't need another one

Her: but baby it's not even about him wanting to father her. he just wants to be more involved in your life

Me: even so. I don't think I want him to be involved in that part of my life just yet. It has only been 6 months

Her: I met Kyle when he was only 3 months

I gasped. I knew she took him in but damn she couldn't wait
huh

Her: hear me out ok, Melo was the one who wanted me to meet him and as much as I wasn't ready but that alone determined where Melo and I were going with our relationship. You see I already knew I wanted to be in Melo's life for the rest of my life and if that meant meeting his son and accepting him then so be it. I don't see the point of dating for the sake of having someone to shag... but then again I'm old school like that

Me: so what you are saying is that if I don't see a future with him then I shouldn't put Kendra in the middle of it?

Her: yes. I mean say Kendra likes him and then a month down the line things end

Advertisement

then what? You know your daughter is very inquisitive

Me: I know

Her: think about what's best for you and your daughter and if the introduction is worth it or not

Me: thanks Yaya

She pulled me in for a hug

Her: anytime baby

We broke it

Me: I should go

Her: did Miso tell you that he was coming this side for a week

Me: nope but Kendra mentioned that he was coming this side

Her: yeah he's doing some hi-tech what-what and they yeah

Me: that's good for him I guess

Her: Yolanda when will you stop this? this you and him playing games? It's pretty clear that you two love each other

Me: mah I tried everything to make him stay but he was determined on leaving. I try talking to him about us but he dismisses the topic just like that

Her: I won't make any excuses for his behaviour towards you but from what he has told me, you the one here who can't seem to decided what It is you want. Landa I love you as my granddaughter's mother and I would really like to see you end up with my son but at the same time until you figure out what it is you really want then you and Miso can't really be anything. I don't believe in this whole friends with benefits thing and also I don't believe in whatever you and Miso were doing because someone ends up hurt or caught up in the crossfire and right now I don't want my grandbaby caught up. Fix your life and let

Miso fix his before you and him can try whatever it is you two think could work out

Me: I hear you Mah

Her: good. Now travel safely and have safe fun

She said hugging me and planted a kiss on my cheek and then broke the hug

Me: Bye Mah

I walked to the lounge and the girls were playing with grandpa Bess and MJ was also there with his dad. I'm guessing they were discussing Bess. I greeted and kissed the girls goodbye and then left for the airport. We boarded and then landed.

New York was amazing I didn't want to come back but life had to go on right? I had a missed call from an unknown number and I didn't get back to it because there are some creepers out there. Toby sent me Ivy's number and I'm glad to say that she and I are working on our relationship and we good. She is engaged to be married and I have not met her fiancé yet but she said she would bring him to Toby's wedding because he was away on business and she also hasn't met my boyfriend but I'm planning on introducing her to him soon. We were slowly but surely going back to the sisters we once were and I won't lie I was happy to revive our relationship. Miso was in town and he and Kendra was living with him for the time he is

here. It was on a Tuesday and I had just gotten back from work. Marcy decided she was going to divorce her husband because she is not cut out for playing step mommy and I was with her every step of the way. There was a knock on the door and I got up and wore my sleepers and went to get it, it was already late so I don't get who would be here at this time... it was past 8 but you get my point of the whole not used to visitor's thingy. I opened the door and Miso was standing on the other side. I won't lie I haven't seen him since he came back, we've only spoken on the phone when he said he would come by to fetch Imi and then I was at work and the nanny was at home then so yes this was our first time meeting since last month. I think we spent about 5 minutes just taking in each other mentally and thinking what we would say to the other. He still looked hot or maybe even better than when I saw him or maybe it's because I haven't seen him in a month... argh I don't know anymore.

Me: hi

Him: hey Buttercup

Only Yaya's family calls me that now that he's gone and to have him stand before me and let the name he has for me and only me role out of his mouth just like that is enough to make my mind travel to a far far away place when he first gave me the name.

Me: uhm... please come in

I said standing aside and he walked in closing the bugler behind him and then we stood there in awkwardness.

Him: how have you been?

Me: I've been ok... and how have you been?

That was not even a question but it felt right in the moment cause looking at him he's been doing great in SA.

Him: I'm ok too. You look good

I looked down to my bunny sleepers, my pjay shorts and the unbuttoned shirt I was wearing and then back up at him. He was kidding me right? What does he mean I looked good?

Me: thanks. Can I get you something to drink?

I had my glass in my hand and took a quick sip of it

Him: no thanks. Are you busy?

Me: when?

Him: now?

Me: I just got back from work Miso

Him: I see that. Can we go out for dinner and talk?

Me: can we order in and talk? I don't feel like dressing up

Him: I'm fine with whatever you want

Me: Pizza or burgers?

Him: pizza

Me: sure

I took my phone and called the pizza hub and then after the call I went to find him in the lounge pressing his phone.

Me: it will be here in 30 minutes

Him: cool

I sat down on the couch next to the one next to him. I can't trust that we won't do anything if I sit on the same couch as him especially when he looks this good and smells this heavenly.

Me: you sure you don't want anything to drink?

Him: dry red if you have any

Me: of course

I walked out to the kitchen and poured him a glass and then as I was about to walk in the lounge there was a knock on the door. I put the glass on the table in the passage and went to get the door and there stood Triston. God kill me NOW!

Him: hey beautiful

Me: Triston hi

I was a little sceptical to open but I had no choice or else I would be hiding something from him... well I am hiding this from him but now he's here and... Oh God hell will break loose. I opened the door wider and let him in. he hugged me and I gave him a cold hug. I was panicking

Him: no kiss?

Me: sorry babe

I planted a kiss on his lips but he made it go deeper while holding my waist tightly and then he broke it.

Him: you look adorable

Me: thank you. You didn't mention you were coming over

Him: I didn't know I needed to report to see my girlfriend

Me: you don't its jus...

Him: since when do you drink dry wine? Do you have a visitor?

"Buttercup we have to go. Its Imi she's...."

He trailed off when he saw Triston. Oh God kill me!

Chapter 36

The minute I heard my daughter's name I couldn't care less about these two guys standing in my kitchen. I broke away from Triston's grip and turned to Miso waiting for him to continue.

Tris: I didn't know you had company

Miso: I thought you said you didn't have plans

They spoke at the same time. if I wasn't worried about my daughter I'd probably attend them both but not now.

Me: what's wrong with Kendra?

Miso: I just got a call from mom saying she had to rush Kendra to the hospital, she wouldn't stop crying

Me: then what the hell are we waiting for?

I said going to the lounge to take my phone and wallet and then met up with Miso outside and Triston standing in the kitchen where I left him

Him: so you just going to leave with him?

Me: I don't have time for this.

I walked to the door and he grabbed my arm as I was about to walk out. I turned to look at him pissed. My daughter is in hospital and he has the nerve to act up now of all times

Me: remove your hand now!

I was very calm. He looked at me and then back at his hand on my arm and removed it

Him: I don't believe you

He walked out and I locked and headed to Miso's car and we drove off. I kept rubbing my hand where Triston had held me, I never noticed how tight his grip was until now. it's actually painful and it left me pink

Miso: you ok?

Me: yeah I'm fine

Him: you keep rubbing your arm Buttercup

Me: it's nothing Miso

He looked at me once and back at the road. We parked in front of the hospital and I ran inside with Miso behind me and we found Yaya in the reception with Mr Bess pacing up and down

Me: Where is she? What happened?

Yaya: the doctor is still with her. I don't know, one minute she's ok and the next she's crying saying its painful in her tummy

I don't know what it could be because Imi doesn't have any allergies I know about or anything that could make her this sick. I don't even think it's a stomach bug. Yaya was frustrated and so was I, Miso stood behind me and rubbed my shoulders

Him: she's going to be ok

Me: we don't even know what's wrong with her

Him: but she's going to be ok. don't worry ok

He kissed my head. I was getting impatient waiting on this doctor who refuses to show up already. a while or about two hours later the doctor came and told us that she has ulcers. How the f**k does a 6 year old get ulcers? It didn't make any sense. He explained the possible causes and the only one that made sense to me was the acid drinks thing because my baby loves acids and it don't matter how many times you try to stop her or threaten her she still finds a way to obtain them. I buried my face in my hands

Me: is she going to be ok?

Dr: as long as she stays away from acids and spicy things, she should be fine

I nodded with my face still buried in my hands. I was frustrated because she's too young to live like this.

Miso: can we see her?

Dr: yes, but only for a few minutes

I removed my hands from my face

Me: I am not leaving her side.

Dr: Miss Graha...

Me: doctor I am not going anywhere until I know my daughter is ok

Miso: please show us to her room

Dr nodded and led the way. I thought we'd find her sleeping but instead she was watching cartoon on tv. knowing her she probably manipulated a nurse to put those on for her. I smiled and joined her in bed pulling her to me and kissing her none stop

Me: don't you ever scar me like that

Her: sorry mommy

Yaya: you had us worried there

Her: I didn't mean to Nino

Me: its ok. you're ok now

We sat and she told me what happened, how everything started and how she was feeling. She was laughing at how Yaya panicked.

Her: mommy what happened to your arm?

Me: where?

Her: here

She said touching my arm and I looked at how pink it was. I thought that after some time the pinkness would have been gone by now but nope... it was still pink and I still very much had his fingers on my arm. I didn't know I bruised easily. I saw Miso's face change same time and I just knew what was going to go down.

Me: it's nothing baby

Miso: he did that?

Yaya: who?

Me: guys I'm fine. Miso

I'm ok

I just pulled my baby closer to me and changed the subject to something else but Miso was very much far away. Yaya and Melo said their goodbyes and left me with an unhappy Miso and a sleeping beauty. He pulled my arm and looked at it

Me: don't do anything stupid

Him: does he hit you?

Me: no. he just grabbed me, it wasn't intentional

Him: he's going to pay for this

Me: Miso please.

He didn't respond and just let me be. I don't know when I fell asleep but when I woke up he was gone. I just knew where he was, I tried calling him but he didn't answer any of my calls. God Miso will be the death of me I swear. In the morning I called in at work saying I would come in late because my daughter was in hospital and would be discharged today in the afternoon. Miso walked in with a few bruises on his face.

Imi: daddy what happened to your face?

Him: it's nothing baby girl. just reacting to something I ate
I knew that he and Triston went at it

Her: you should watch what you eat dad or else you also going to end up in a hospital bed

Him: next time princess. Buttercup can we talk outside for a minute

I looked at Imi and she nodded and I got out of bed and walked out after Miso.

Me: he really did a number on you

Him: you should see him

He chuckled and I held a straight face

Me: I asked you not to do anything stupid

Him: and I wasn't going to let him get away with hurting you like that Buttercup

Me: he didn't hurt me. look my arm is fine

Him: still Buttercup. I don't take kindly to women abusers. If he can do that to you then he is capable of doing more than that. You need to end things with this guy, he's not good for you

Me: and you are?

Him: of cause I am but buttercup I'm being serious here. The guy is engaged to be married

Me: oh so you finally found dirt on him

Him: Yolanda

Me: Miso what do want? What are you even doing here?

Him: I came here to see you

Me: after avoiding me for a flipping month and then suddenly you rock up telling me that my boyfriend is engaged

Him: Buttercup

Me: ju... just don't ok. You said it yourself, we not good for each other. You not for me and I'm not for you and we better off the way things are. You don't get to waltz back into my life and expect things to go back to the way they once were. You left me Misokuhle and you never turned back. You broke my heart.

You hurt me and you think that you rocking up is going to undo the damage that's already been done? NO it doesn't work like that. It just doesn't.

I left him standing there with his mouth hanging. He seemed stunned to hear what came out of my mouth. I tried calling Triston but reached his voicemail instead. I tried again but still nothing until I left about 5 missed calls. I called in at work saying I wasn't going to go in at all today. I decided to drive to his place and there was a car parked outside with his. I have been to his house before but I never stay long... like I only stay the weekend, certain weekends and then back to my house. I walked up to the door and knocked and he opened wearing a vest and formal pants. He seemed surprised to see me.

Him: what are you doing here?

Looking at him Miso really did a number on him and seems like Miso hit him more than he hit Miso.

Me: aren't you going to invite me in?

He looked behind him and then back at me. you don't need rocket science in order to know that nigga had company

Me: don't bother.

I walked away and he came after me calling my name

Me: what?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: about?

Him: manhandling you. It was wrong of me

Me: I see Miso knocked some sense into you

Him: I'm apologising babe. Please forgive me

I looked at the car and back at him

Him: a friend of mine slept over

Me: so you not engaged to be married?

Him: what? NO. if I was engaged to anyone it would be you

He said pulling me by my waist. I just looked at him and pulled myself away from him and got inside my car and drove back to the hospital, on the way I was praying that Miso wasn't there but who am I kidding? Of course he wouldn't leave his daughter's side. He and her were bonding. He was on the bed with her talking and laughing. At that moment my heart literally melted at the sight of them.

Chapter 37

My baby was out of the hospital and she was back home. After what happened I just wanted her home where I could monitor her, now it's not that I don't trust Yaya and Derrick but I don't want to burden them with a sick child because doc said to keep a close eye on the things she eats and I am fortunate enough to have a smart daughter because she knows better now that she spent the night in a hospital bed. Her father spent the day with her dad and then he brought her over when I had gotten back from work. As for Miso and I... well I think that chapter is closed, he's tried fixing what's broken but let's be realistic, no-one has ever died from being single. I love him yes and he completes me but I don't know. Yaya's idea of us working on ourselves first before working on us. we haven't really had much of a conversation ever since that day, I've been avoiding him at all costs. When he's around I'm busy in my room with the door locked so that he doesn't enter because Miso is not afraid to enter the room without knocking. It was the weekend of Toby's wedding and I was flying there with my daughter and my date being my brother. His wife was gone home for the weekend and my boyfriend was not on talking terms with me ever since the Miso saga. We got to the venue and I called Toby. I needed to see him and to wish him luck on his big day. He answered and he told me where his room was and that's where I went, I excused myself from my daughter and brother

and went to his room. I knocked and he opened still in sweatpants and a t-shirt

Me: I thought you'd be dressed by now

Him: morning to you too Red. I am nervous AF and how are you?

I pulled him in for a hug and indeed he was nervous he was even shaking; I couldn't help but laugh because I have never witnessed Toby like this. We broke the hug and he let me in.

Me: how are you?

Him: like I said. Nervous, how are you?

Me: I am good. Life's been kind

Him: where's the little one? I was hoping I'd meet her

Me: she's downstairs with my brother

Him: I thought you'd be here with your boyfriend

Me: we had a fight so I doubt he's coming

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: I'm not here to talk about me. How's the future Mrs? She must be a catch

Him: she's a real catch. She's amazing. Her name is Camille and she's a child psychologist

Me: sounds charming

Him: she's everything Red

Me: I am happy if you happy

Him: and you? How's the little one?

Me: she's a doll. She was in hospital a few days back, she has ulcers

Him: argh poor thing. I never thought I'd live to see the day where you are actually a mother

I laughed. I laughed because I never thought I'd give birth to a baby girl and I always said if I gave birth to a girl then I'd give her up for adoption because I didn't want her to share the same fate as me.

Me: I'm a great mother and Kendra is proof of that

Him: then I have to meet this Kendra. How are things with her father? It can't be easy having his daughter being fathered by another man

Me: my boyfriend has not met my daughter just yet

Him: well you're strict

Me: happy me and happy Miso.

Him: if you say so. Surely it can't be easy for the guy though

Me: it's not because he's been nagging to meet her but you know me

Him: yeah I know you.

Me: I should leave you to get dressed. Good luck and yeah

He chuckled and I pulled him in for a hug before walking out.

On my way downstairs I bumped into Miso's ex, Carly...

Someone I haven't seen since she and walked out of my house.

Her: Yolanda

Me: Carly

Her: what a surprise. What are you doing here?

Me: I am here to support my childhood guardian. And what are you doing here?

Her: I'm the maid of honour. The bride is my sister

Me: uhhm wow.

Her: I should go

Me: Carly I'm really sorry for everything

Her: it's all in the past. Despite everything that's happened, he's a great guy and he loves you more than anything. I really thought I could make him see me and love me the way he loves you but I'm not you, and I could never be you. Just treat him right ok

Me: I uhhm....

Her: Bye buttercup see you around

She left me as speechless as one can get. I walked down and met up with my brother and daughter. I got a call from Ivy asking where I was and I told her and within minutes she was with us. she greeted everyone

Me: so where is my future brother in law?

Her: he's stuck at work and will be here later. Where is this boyfriend of yours?

I chuckled

Me: probably at work. He hates my guts at the moment

Her: what did you do?

Me: Miso

Her: I should have known. Don't even say anything further.

Me: accompany me to the ladies please

Her: sure let's go.

We went to the ladies and I went to pee and then walked out and saw some bruises on her back as she was trying to zip up her jumpsuit

Me: let me help you

I helped her zip it up

Her: thank you. Tino helped me with it this morning

That's apparently a name she got from her fiancé's parents, they call him that

Me: Ivy

Her: yes

Me: please be honest with me

Her: uhhm ok... about?

Me: the bruises on your back, he did that to you?

Her: what? No. he didn't do that

Advertisement

I have this skin deficiency thingy

Me: I'm not stupid Ivy. Tell me the truth right now

Her: Red its nothing ok

Me: when did it start?

Her: I'm not being abused sis can we drop it now

She said walking away and I let her be. I am not stupid, she had purple bruises on her lower back and upper back. I wonder what kind of monster she's engaged to. I walked out after her

and went to join the rest of the people. The wedding commenced and just as they were saying their vows I saw Triston walk in and make his way to our row, I won't lie I thought he was going to come to me but instead he sat next to my sister and kissed his cheek. I gasped in shock. This I did not see coming. We got up to welcome the lovely couple and that's when he actually noticed me and looked down nervously. In our row it was him, Ivy, my brother, Kendra and then me, I was sitting in the far end next to the isle and he was on the other end of the chairs. Normally I'd request answers but I think I'd got all the answers I could possibly want from this. Yonda looked at me and I shrugged, he can see what's going on so why turn to me? Miso was right after all. Gosh I'm such a fool. Finally, we got up and Yonda followed us.

Him: sis what's going on?

Me: honey go and play with the other kids I'll come find you ok

Her: yes, mommy

She ran to the other kids and left me with Yonda

Him: what's going on?

Me: you asking me

Him: how is it that your boyfriend is dating your little sister and you didn't know about it?

Me: I just didn't know Yonda. I guess he hid it all too well

Him: nah sis. You telling me you and your sister never spoke of his name or something?

Me: she calls him Tino... how was I supposed to know

Him: so what now?

Me: Ivy doesn't know and we'll keep it at that but it's over between him and I

Ivy and her "fiancé" walked over to us hand in hand and her all giggles.

Her: you left so quick

Me: sorry babe had to take care of something

Her: anyway this is my fiancé Dr Triston Martins. Tino meet my big sister Yolanda and her twin Yonda

He could barely look at me in the eye, guilt was written all over his guilty face. It was taking all the strength in me not to throw the champagne I was carrying in his face. And also because I didn't want to ruin Toby's special day.

Me: nice to meet you Dr Triston Martins

My sister was using her mother's surname while I used Graham so you can imagine how he probably did not know we sisters or maybe he knew but decided to be trash about it.

Yonda: yeah nice to meet you

We both shook his hand. I excused myself and went to find my baby, at least she calms me down.

“Yolanda please wait up”

I heard him call out behind me. I didn’t want to turn but I did and I threw a slap at him

Him: I can explain

Me: explain what? That you were playing me this whole time? or maybe that you knew that Ivy was my little sister and still went on to pursue me? or maybe you want to explain the bruises on her back caused by your hand

The level of anger I was feeling at that moment was one I could not put into words because it was more than anger, it was rage on another level.

Chapter 38

PRESENT DAY – THERAPISTS OFFICE

I was laying with my back on the couch supporting my head on the arm rest comfortably with my eyes closed. I felt so relaxed having told someone everything about my life. People weren't lying about talking to a stranger cause it actually lifts off that burden that's long been there.

Her: So I'm guessing that's when things went south between you and your sister?

Me: doc, this was only two years ago and I got arrested about 6 months ago I think

Her: ok. I want us to go back on the abuse and how it affected you

Me: I think I mentioned it all in my story doc and how it affected me

Her: yes, and I heard every bit. I have to ask, had you not suffered what you suffered as a child, do you think you'd be where you are right now?

I chuckled trying to imagine life without the abuse and every other pain I ever endured and I don't think I'd be where I am today.

Her: I'm not saying it's good that you suffered because no child deserves what you went through but answer me honestly

Me: I guess the abuse made me stronger than I could have been without it. Doc it forced me to grow up before time and had Ester been a better mother then maybe I wouldn't be locked up in here today

Her: you blame her for being locked up in here?

Me: it's all her fault. Everything wrong in my life is her fault.

Her: and what about your role in all of it? I mean some things could have been avoided but you chose not to. You mentioned that so many times your friend asked you to move in with her and her family so that you wouldn't endure what you did and you could have easily moved in with them but you chose not to

Me: so what are you saying? That I enjoyed it?

Her: no that's not what I'm saying. What I'm saying is that sometimes we allow ourselves to be treated in a certain way when we can actually stop the treatment. Look you were a child when it all started but you let it go on for 6 years when you could have taken action. You went to a good school which has social services to handle such cases as yours and your sister

Me: A man of such power and a child from a broken home. whom would you believe between the two? Don't you think he

would have twisted the story to favour him instead of me? Doc
have you ever endured abuse?

She shook her head

Me: exactly so you don't know what you dealing with and what
it does to one mentally. Don't you think I wanted to get out of
that life as soon as I could but I couldn't. I'm not street smart
and I've never been, I've always been book smart and I had one
goal in mind. Obtain my matric and get out of that place and
despite what you may think I made it out pretty well.

Her: And your biological mother?

Me: what about her?

Her: how are things between you and her with you here?

Me: I talk to her every day and she visits whenever she can.
She's been doing her level best to get me out of here. If it
weren't for her and Miso I don't think

Advertisement

I'd have any hope of leaving this place

Her: Did you and Miso ever pursue a relationship? I mean one
minute you in love and the next you over. How has what's
happened between you and him affected you?

Me: it's no secret I've loved him since forever but you'll have to let me finish the story if you want to know about Miso and I

Her: fair enough. and your daughter?

Me: she... she has been the light of my life, the light in the end of the tunnel. I would do anything for her

Her: like you've done for your sister?

Me: that's different. I wouldn't just kill for Kendra. I'd purge for her

Her: let's get back to you and your sister.

Me: I love her and she loves me and I would do it all over again for her because she's my sister

Her: she vanished for years without saying anything to you

Me: she had her reasons and we fixed things

Her: until?

Me: does it really matter doc? All that matters is that I would do anything for her

Her: Yolanda I know and you know that your case does not look good. We looking at life in prison

Me: then so be it

Her: Yolanda I know I don't know you personally but based on what I've heard from you even if the story is not done but you are not capable of killing someone. At least not the way you killed him

Me: he deserved to die

Her: because he was abusing your sister or because of what he put you through?

Me: what he put me through?

Her: I've had a chat with Miso and he is more than determined to get you out of here and from what I've gathered from your lawyer. He put you through hell

Me: I think this is enough for today

Her: Yolanda we not done yet

Me: I think we done doc. I'd like to go back to my cell

Her: not in the condition you in. You not strong enough

I kept quiet and bit my lower lip. This woman does not seem to want to let this go.

Her: I am trying to help you here and in case you haven't noticed, I am probably the only one who can help you here so please don't make my job difficult

Me: look. Talking to you has been great and all but I'd like to rest now

Her: fine. We'll continue tomorrow then

Me: thank you doc. Enjoy the rest of your day

I got up and headed for the door

Her: Yolanda wait

I stopped in my tracks

Her: now I'm not supposed to do this but I have something for you. Come here

I went back to my seat and she typed on her computer and then a while later she turned the laptop to me and there she was. So beautiful and so grown. I can't believe I haven't seen her in 6 months. I don't want her visiting me and I've begged and pleaded for my family not to bring her here. Tears just trickled my eyes at the sight of her.

PC

Her: mommy

Me: hey baby

I said holding back tears and she had that beautiful smile of hers that always warmed my heart

Her: mommy don't cry

Me: I'm happy baby. I'm happy to be talking to you

Her: mommy daddy and uncle Yanga are doing everything in their power to get you out of there

Me: I know baby

Her: I need you to be strong mommy. I need you to be strong for me

Me: I'm trying baby

Her: I love you so much mom

Me: I love you too. I hope you not giving grandma and daddy much trouble

Her: daddy's not coping mom. he's scared. I heard him talking to uncle Kyle on the phone yesterday

I swallowed a huge lump on my throat. I hate that I can't be there for her and hold her in my arms and tell her everything will all be ok. I hate that I'm here. I just hate myself for putting her through this.

Her: daddy says it's not looking good for you but mommy I prayed and God said that you didn't do whatever it is they saying you did. God says you don't belong in there and he said that you are going to get out

Me: you spoke to God?

Her: yes, mommy and he answered me. We were at the park and we were playing games and it was just beautiful

I smiled with my hand on my mouth shocked at what I was hearing from my baby. I'm not a religious person but I'm also not atheist. One could say I believe there's a God and I do pray every now and then but I'm not big on church. While my daughter on the other hand, she's super religious and she goes to church every Sunday with Yaya or My mom when she's in New York or with her father. I love that she's devoted to church. Doc tapped her wrist indicating I had to say my goodbyes

Me: baby I have to go ok. I love you so so so much

Her: I love you to the moon and back

Me: and I love you to the stars and back. Bye baby

Her: bye mommy

She kissed the screen and I couldn't help but smile. I ended the call.

End Of PC

Me: thank you doc

Her: you welcome

Me: I hope this doesn't get you into trouble

She chuckled

Her: see you tomorrow Yolanda

Me: thanks again doc.

I walked out of her office in a much lighter mood than I was when I walked in. things were looking up and all thanks to my daughter.

Chapter 39

I managed to keep it together and pretend for the rest of the evening until it was time to leave. We got home and Yonda headed straight to his place because apparently there was a braai at a friend's place and I was not in the mood for a crowd. In fact, I asked Miso to come and fetch Kendra. Kendra was in the room on the phone with one of her grandmother's. Miso walked in... well his cologne gave him away

Him: you really should learn to close the door

Me: and miss you sneaking up on me?

I said sarcastically. It was kind of hot and I forgot to close the bugler when we got in.

Him: are you flirting with me Miss Graham?

I didn't respond.

Me: can I get you something to eat or drink?

Him: no thanks I'm good. Everything ok?

Me: yeah why wouldn't it be?

Him: uhm... owokay. I've literally just got here. What's going on? What have I done now?

Me: so Toby's wedding was interesting

Him: I wouldn't expect anything less from a wedding

Me: so Ivy had invited her fiancé and he came a while later. And guess what, her fiancé just happens to be the guy you told me to stay away from because he's engaged. How long have you known that he was seeing my sister and engaged to be married to her?

Him: I found out that day when Kendra was admitted

Me: and you couldn't give me a heads up that he's engaged to my sister

I said shoving his shoulder

Him: it was not my place to tell

Me: isn't it a little too late for that considering you told me that he was engaged. Don't you think that too was never your news to tell?

Him: I'm sorry buttercup

Me: I've had it up to here with apologies.

Him: to be fair I warned you against him Buttercup from the get go

Me: I'll go call Kendra

He held my arm before I could walk away.

Him: you see this right here; this is your problem Yolanda. You can't handle the truth. You always running away from it and I pray to God that our daughter doesn't turn out like you

Me: excuse me

He let go of my hand

Him: you know I'm right. Every time something gets serious or you suddenly feel the heat you feel the need to run away. Why do you do that Yolanda? Why is that? When I confessed how I felt about you, you avoided me for days, when I popped the question you started distancing yourself from me. What the hell is wrong with you?

I won't lie that struck a nerve. That stung real hard and for the first time I saw a side of Miso I was never ready for. He wasn't pissed or something

Him: you never listen to anyone but yourself and when things suddenly don't turn out as you'd hope you find someone else to blame because in your mind you are never wrong. You refuse to be wrong as if you'll be crucified for being wrong. I try to understand you but every time I think I'm close you always find a way to push me away. I've tried everything but you seemingly want to be alone and its fine, I'll leave you alone because I can't do this anymore with you. I can't keep going back and forth with a person who refuses to grow the fuck up.

He left me standing there and went upstairs. I have never seen Miso like this and I don't think I ever want to see this side of him ever again. He really scared the shiit out of me. I leaned in on the kitchen counter and covered my face with my hands

Advertisement

I was trying to stop the tears but they wouldn't stop coming out. he really went hard on me for once and I won't lie he had a point about me... maybe even more than I thought because after all no one else knows me as well as he does. I heard them come down the stairs talking and I got up to wash my face in the sink and turned to them.

Kendra: mommy

Me: got everything?

Him: yeah. I'll bring her back tomorrow after church

Me: uhhm ok

She came to give me a hug

Her: I will see you tomorrow ok mommy

Me: ok my angel. Mommy loves you

Her: I love you to the moon and back

Me: and I love you to the stars and back

She giggled and let go of me. I squatted in front of her and planted a kiss on her forehead, cheeks and then lips... she liked that.

Me: bye now

Her: bye mommy

She walked out and Miso turned to me

Him: sort your life out Yolanda. Decided what exactly it is you want in your life. Bye

With that he walked out and left me like that. I went to the door and locked up after them and poured myself a glass of wine and went to the lounge and channel hopped. I had a dozen missed calls from Triston. I cleared my notifications and then put my phone back on the table and on silent this time instead of vibrate. I don't know when I drifted off but I was woken up by a loud banging on the door. I dragged my feet and gulped the rest of my glass and then went to open after placing it on the counter. It was Triston.

Him: Yolanda please

Me: what are you doing here?

Him: I owe you an explanation and I'm not leaving without you hearing me out. so please open

Me: promise after this you will stay the f**k away from me

Him: I can't do that Yolanda

Me: then please leave

Him: Yolanda I love you

Me: funny cause you engaged to my little sister

Him: I didn't know she was your sister

Me: you lying.

Him: ok fine. When I found out you two are sisters it was already late and I had already popped the question. We've been engaged for a year and she was at work and finishing her time there before moving here with me.

Me: why didn't you tell me you were engaged?

Him: cause I knew that if I had told you then you wouldn't have agreed to be with me. I swear I didn't know you two were sisters until it was late

Me: and you still didn't do anything about it

Him: I've been trying to bring myself to end things with her but I couldn't. I promised her mother I would take good care of her daughter

Me: I don't believe you. And the abuse

He looked down.

Him: it was one time

Me: she has bruises on her back.

Him: it was a mistake

Me: stay away from her Triston

Him: only if you'll get back together with me

Me: go fuck yourself. I'll never be with you

Him: then I won't leave Ivy alone. My whole family loves her so
no

Me: why are you with her if she's your punching bag

Him: she's not my punching bag. Believe it or not I love her

Me: and you love me too right? Just leave and never come here
again or I'll tell her everything

Him: you don't want to try me Yolanda

Me: excuse you

Him: don't test me Yolanda. I am with your sister and she is
madly in love with me and if you dare try to ruin what she and I
have, I swear to God you will live to regret it

Me: are you threatening me?

Him: no, I'm warning you. You won't say anything to Ivy and I
won't touch her, dare talk and you'll never see her

I swallowed hard and he had this annoying smirk on his face

Him: now be a good girlfriend and let me in and we won't have any problems

Me: Ivy is your problem and not mine

I don't know what game I was playing but I wasn't going to let myself be abused the same way Ivy's mother abused me years back. I was not going to suffer the sufferings I thought I had conquered.

Him: you don't know this game you trying to play Buttercup. Don't start now. open this damn bugler

Me: No. leave or else I'll call the cops

He chuckled

Him: and that's supposed to scare me right? oh please. I have the law right on the palm of my hands Yolanda. You want your sister to stick around and alive don't you? Then I suggest you let me and let us continue with the way things once were between us before your dramatic storm out

Chapter 40

I love my sister and I would do anything for her but I was not going to allow myself to go back to the same shit I let myself endure with Ester. Back then I was young and didn't know anything, all I knew was that I needed to look out for my sister but now. with everything that has happened I don't think I can do this. If Ivy wanted to leave Triston, then she would have left me from the minute he raised his hand on her but instead she chose to stay knowing the kind of person the man is. I love her yes but she left and never looked back and even when she came back she didn't think to get in contact with me. which to me seems as though she was doing just fine without me in her life. Maybe its best I just keep my distance from her once and for all, with an explanation unlike her. It was during the week and I had asked her to come to the office to meet me for lunch. She walked in carrying lunch for the both of us, she looked beautiful.

Me: hello sis

I got up to hug her and she flinched a little. Triston hadn't stopped calling me or sending me threats, it was Wednesday now.

Her: hey beautiful

Me: how are you?

I held her at arm's length

Her: I'm good thanks and how are you?

Me: I'm ok. you sure you good?

She smiled, her smile was not the one I once knew, that twinkle that made us give her the name sunshine was not there anymore. I looked at her

Her: I'm fine I swear

I nodded and sat down and offered her to sit and she sat down.

Her: Lala

Me: sunshine

Her: what's going on?

Me: with?

Her: you and Triston

Me: nothing

Her: I'm not stupid. I saw you at Toby's wedding and I saw your car at the house the other day at the house

Me: maybe you should ask him

Her: I'm asking you Yolanda

Me: we were dating or at least I thought we were until I saw him at the wedding with you

Her: how long?

Me: 6 months

She kept quiet almost as though she was thinking

Me: look this guy is not right for you, he's not good for you and if you don't leave him now, he's going to kill you

She shook her head

Her: he loves me

Me: is it? what about the bruises? Is that still love?

Her: he told me you would pin things on him

Me: what?

Her: I knew you were vindictive but this? this is low even for you

Me: excuse you

Her: you think I don't know that you knew about me from the beginning. You think I don't know that you seduced him just to get to me

Me: Ivy I don't understand. I would never do that to you

Her: I used to think mom hated you but I now see the person you are. You're an evil person. I hate you. I never want to see you again. Stay away from Triston and myself

Me: fine. Get out of my office

Her: with pleasure

She walked out slowly and banged the door on her way out and I found myself throwing everything on my table on the floor in frustration. Triston is a manipulative ass! How dare he turn everything and pin it on me? I was furious. I wanted to strangle him and Yvette with my bare hands the way I was so mad. My little sister is dick whipped I swear. And what the hell did Ester say to this girl about me? Speaking of Ester, I heard she died and Ivy's fiancé was her doctor. It's funny how we always spoke of this guy if hers but not once did she mention who the guy was

well she did say he was a doctor who recently moved to this side and all that other stuff but she never gave much detail about him. I figured let me pack up my crap and leave the office because I won't be able to concentrate for the rest of the day. I didn't have much work to do anyway. On my way home I got a call from Yonda's wife who was heavily pregnant with their second baby, she was due to give birth in two months' time.

PC

Her: Yolanda

Me: Bridget

Her: I miss you

Me: you miss me or you miss my cooking?

Her: would I be wrong if I said both?

She laughed and so did I. her voice was tiny and cute you'd think you talking to a 5-year-old or something. plus, her height didn't do her any justice, I always ask what my brother saw in her and he just laughs. She's too adorable for her age and job, she's a cardiologist.

Me: I just got off work, I can swing by

Her: why you out so early? Everything ok?

Me: I just need to breathe that's all

Her: what better way to breathe than coming over to cook for your favourite sister in law

Me: Jesus Christ you are so manipulative you know that

Her: I know and you love me still. I'll send you a list of things to buy and transfer you cash ok?

Me: you don't have to send me money sis

Her: it's no big deal plus the list is quiet long. I'd ask Yonda but you know my husband

Me: yep. Fine I'll get you your things

Her: I love you

Me: I don't

Her: you don't say that to a pregnant woman

I laughed and so did she. At least her moods weren't haywire today, she has her days where she'll cry for every little thing but today she was in a good mood I guess and I'm happy that she is

Me: I'm sorry. won't happen again

Her: good. Now get your ass here

Me: yes, ma'am

Her: bye

Me: bye

End of PC

She sent the list and the money and I bought these things of hers and then drove off to her house which was on the other side of town. I parked inside the yard and made my way inside. I knocked and she came to open and then welcomed me with a hug.

Her: I missed you

Me: I see that

I said breaking the hug

Me: what are you eating?

She chuckled

Her: coco pops

Me: and what's my nephew supposed to eat?

Her: and what about the one I'm carrying? Or is he not supposed to eat cereal?

Me: whatever. Where's your sitter?

Her: she's not my sitter

Me: she gets paid to take care of you

Her: your brother is dramatic because I don't need a sitter

Me: so now she's a sitter

Her: whatever. Just cook

Me: where does my brother stash his wine first?

Her: you should probably stop drinking ey

Me: I'll stop when I'm pregnant

Her: and what happens if you are but you just don't know that yet?

I laughed

Me: you very funny Bridge. That wine

Her: in the cellar... I'm lazy to go downstairs

Me: I'll go get it

I headed to the cellar and got a bottle of sweet red and then went back up and poured myself a glass and then started chopping with her helping me chop over light conversation

Her: so does this mean you and Miso will never be?

Me: after our last conversation, doesn't seem like

Her: he did say sort your life out and to me sounds like he still wants to be with you but only if you sort yourself out

Me: and what exactly is it that I need to sort out?

Her: what it is you want in your life. I love you and I admire you but you don't seem to know what exactly it is that you want.

One minute you happy with Triston and the next you banging Miso and then minutes later you want to be with Miso and then when that seems to get serious you take the highway.

Me: Triston is engaged to Ivy and today Ivy came to confront me I think and she said she never wants to see me cause I apparently seduced her man

I told her the whole story and some of the things Ivy said.

Her: ok that's a lot to take in. What? You are either stupid or ignorant to not know that your boyfriend has been engaged this whole time you two have been together

Me: ignorant. Triston wasn't love, he was supposed to be a good distraction from thinking about Miso

Her: and how did that work out?

Me: clearly it didn't because here he is threatening me and using my little sister while at it

Her: can't you like file a restraining order against the guy?

Me: I can but what about Ivy?

Her: you have lived your life shielding someone who clearly didn't need any shielding, maybe it's time to be selfish and think about yourself. You have a daughter to shield now. I'm sure Ivy knows the monster she's with and if she wanted out she would have walked out a long time ago

Me: what if when she decided to walk out it's too late?

Her: then that's all on her. Ivy is a grown woman and she makes her own decisions. Was she not the one who came to the office and threw insults at you telling you to stay away from her and all that other crap? Maybe it's time you listened and just stay away from her because she clearly doesn't need you. I love you sis and I would hate for you to get hurt

Me: I know babe

I went to pour the things I had been chopping in the pot and then went back to the counter opposite her and chopped more veggies over light conversations about other things. She was right, maybe I should stay away from Ivy like she wants me to.

Chapter 41

I was in the kitchen cooking for my princess and waiting for her to come back with her father, guy was supposed to have left but who knows why he is still around and I haven't asked either. I got a message from Triston which read "you will regret what you did"

"mommy"

I felt her arms wrap around my legs. I looked down to her and put my phone down and hugged her back.

Me: how was school?

Her: school was amazing. Daddy and I went to get ice cream and chocolate

Me: I thought I said no sweet things at this hour

She giggled and let go of her

"I couldn't resist her puppy eyes"

I looked up and Miso was standing by the door with a smile. I swear he gets hotter everytime I see him. he was leaning by the door with his hands in his pockets wearing navy NY cap, navy joggers, white t-shirt and white sneakers.

Him: hey

Me: hi. Honey go put your bag upstairs and change into the dress ontop of your bed

Her: yes mummy. Don't go anywhere I'll be back now now

She said looking at her father pointing her with her index finger as though she was scolding him. I couldn't help but laugh at how serious she suddenly was

Him: I wont go anywhere princess

Her: good.

With that she walked out and left us laughing

Me: I was making dinner, can I count you in or?

Him: you heard your daughter, I'm not allowed to leave

I nodded and turned back to the pot

Him: how are you?

Me: I'm good thanks and how are you?

Him: you know what I'm asking buttercup

I could literally feel him standing right behind me. I turned to face him

Me: better than I should be I guess

He moved to the other side and leaned on the counter and I turned to the pots

Him: whats this?

Me: what?

Him: this? what does this mean? Whats going on Yolanda?

He was holding my phone reading my messages from Triston. GREAT! For once I didn't want to involve Miso in my drama or mess or whatever. I mean he's always there to rescue me EVERYTIME I'm in need of rescuing. He was waiting for an answer but I didn't have one for me... ok maybe I did but I didn't know where to begin. I mean the texts are self-explanatory so whats there to explain really?

Him: Yolanda

What happened to him calling me buttercup?

Me: yes

Him: Whats going on here? Why's Triston threatening you?

I shrugged

Me: he's mad cause I ended things with him

Him: what? Was he expecting you to stay with him even after you found out he's dating your sister? that's messed up

Me: yeah well he's mad

Him: why didn't you tell me Yolanda?

I shrugged again. I felt like I was in an interrogation room right now and this guy wasn't going to let go easily

Him: Why didn't you tell me anything?

Me: because Miso... I'm tired of always running to you. I'm tired of always having to turn to you whenever things are screwed up in my life

Him: you the mother of my child Buttercup. I will always be there for you. I will always be there to rescue you

He turned me to him and made me face him, he lifted my face up with his index finger

Him: despite everything that has happened and everything that I said to you Buttercup

Advertisement

the way I feel about you hasn't changed one single bit. i will forever be there for you no matter what. I will deal with Triston

Me: I appreciate everything you just said but this is my fight

Him: Butte...

I put my finger on his lips shutting him up

Me: let me handle this. Ivy is my sister and Triston is my ex. Let me deal with this and if I cant then I'll come to you for help

By this time I had removed my finger from his lips and we were looking deep into each others eyes.

Him: are you sure?

Me: yes I'm sure

He bent down to kiss me and I couldn't help but respond. His lips... something I had forgotten in this time he was gone. he grabbed my ass and pulled me closer while I wrapped my arms around his neck devouring him. his touch on my ass was making me wet down there, with every tongue stroke I could feel a good sensation between my legs.

“sies!”

We broke the kiss and Kendra was standing by the door with her hands covering her eyes. we looked at each other embarrassed. Of all the times she could walk in on us she chose this one? This girl! Miso cleared his throat and pointed down with his eyes making my eyes widen. He was hard, I found myself giggling and bit my lower lip

Kendra: are you guys done now

Me: yes baby we done

Miso gave me a look and I just smiled. He mouthed “you'll pay for this” and I giggled again

Her: you guys are disgusting

Me: hey. We still your parents young Miss

Her: I'm gonna tell grandma

Miso: and you and I will never go out for ice cream again

Her: that's not fair

Him: whats not fair is you telling your grandma our business

Her: fine. We have a deal

I just chuckled and let these two be. I always wondered what its like when they spend time together without me being around and I'm starting to think its like this all the time. the pointless adorable arguments.

Me: any homeworks?

Her: nope.

Me: you sure?

She nodded with a smile, full teeth smile and all

Him: okay princess

Her: come lets leave mommy to cook and go watch tv

Me: I need help

Her: no. you two will just kiss again

We looked at each other and laughed. Whats wrong with my daughter lately? She has an answer for everything. she just drops bombs and stuff. Unexpectedly.

Him: she's your mother and I'm your father, we allowed to share a kiss every now and then

Her: but you not married

Him: should we be married to kiss?

She shrugged. Maybe we confusing her

Her: I don't know. only married people kiss

Me: can you two argue elsewhere

Him: we not arguing. We having a conversation

Her: yes we just talking and keeping you company. What are you cooking?

Me: meat and mashed potatoes

Him: nice.

When I was done I dished up for everyone with greek salad I had came back with from Yonda's house when I was there earlier. We sat in the lounge and ate watching TV over light conversations. Well Kendra was the one watching TV and Miso and I were catching up

Me: I thought you were leaving this week

Him: I'm enjoying bonding with my daughter

Me: oh cool then

Him: and also my trip got extended, I got a job to do

Me: what do you know about the \$pritz?

Him: how do you know the \$pritz?

Me: I just heard about them around... So?

Him: stay clear of the \$pritz Buttercup

Me: oh

Him: yes. It's a dangerous gang. On another level

Me: mmmh

Him: why do you ask anyway?

Me: incase you haven't ben watching the news lately, they are responsible for the last bank Robbery or atleast that's what people assume... you don't happen to be involved right?

Him: I'm not that desperate for money Buttercup

Me: I understand that b...

Him: I wouldn't risk yours and Kendra's life like that Buttercup. Click did offer me to come aboard but the thought of anything happening to you guys breaks my heart into a million pieces and I wouldn't be able to bare it. so I turned him down

Me: oh

Him: you believe me right?

Me: yeah

Him: you not convincing but whatever. You done eating?

I nodded and he took my plate and took Kendra's too and went to put them in the kitchen and then came back and placed my feet ontop of his lap

Me: you didn't wash those dishes that quick

Him: you have a dishwasher. Why should I be washing dishes with my hands?

Me: brat!

He laughed and started massaging my feet.

Me: princess

Her: yes mommy

Me: whats the time now?

Her: 7:30

Me: and what time do you go to bed again?

Her: 7:30

Me: so chop chop.

Her: but mommy

Me: na.ah princess we not doing this. Lets go wash and get you to bed

Her: fine. Daddy come tuck me in

Him: call me when you done washing

Her: fine

She kissed my cheek and kissed Miso's then went up to her room and left us in the lounge

Him: that's abuse thou

Me: what is?

Him: sleeping that early

Me: what time is she supposed to go to bed?

Him: 8 or 9

Me: she washes at 7:30 and sleeps at around 8....

Him: fine

I rolled my head back and let out a soft moan as he was doing so good with his hands on my feet. I needed this after the day I had. I heard him chuckle

Me: what?

Him: you moaning

Me: I needed this

Him: right

We sat there in silence while he was busy with my feet until Kendra came and they went to her room together. I went to shower while he was busy with his daughter in the meantime. I was almost done when he joined me in the shower

Me: what are you doing?

Him: having a shower with you.

Chapter 42

After our innocent shower. Yes, the shower was innocent, we washed each other's back in silence and it was very nice. It was calming and relaxing and for a while I actually forgot about Triston and my little sister. We went back to the room with each of us with a towel around our body.

Me: you sleeping over?

Him: do you want me to?

Me: I'd love for you to

Him: sure thing babes

I don't lotion my body when I'm about to sleep because I feel it makes no sense. I wore my t-shirt which I got from him by the way. when I turned around he was starring with a smile

Me: what?

Him: you still have that

Me: yeah

It was a t-shirt he gave me back in varsity in our second year. He was leaving for home and he insisted on leaving me something to remember him by and who was I to say no?

Me: you still have the bracelet I gave you hanging on your rear view mirror

He chuckled

Him: so you noticed

He said with that lazy adorable smile of his I hate so much because it's too charming.

Me: just like you noticing the t-shirt I'm wearing now

Him: it's different

Me: whatever. You being weird

Him: can I get a t-shirt

I laughed before looking for something for him to wear because he knew I had something of his in my wardrobe. I took out his old boxer shorts... they not that old because he has slept in my place sometime this year but we didn't sleep on the same bed, he slept in his daughter's room with her only because the next day they were going somewhere together

Him: starting to think you have a lot of my stuff in that closet

Me: maybe I do... you leave your stuff here a lot

Him: what can I say, this place is my other home

Me: then maybe you should start paying rent

Him: maybe I should

I got inside the blankets and he went to switch the lights off and got inside next to me and pulled me to his chest and brushed my hair while I drew meaningless things on his chest with my finger.

Him: I'm sorry about the way I spoke to you the other day

Me: its ok. I needed that, it made me see a lot of things I didn't quite see about myself before

Him: oh

Me: yeah. Miso while you were in SA I spoke to Yaya

Him: she told me

Me: let me finish. She mentioned a lot of things that made sense. Like how we should each work on ourselves before we work on us.

244, 248); line-height: normal;">Him: mmmh

Me: I think we should give us a shot. Miso it's no use denying what we each feel for each other. Well you don't deny it but I do and so far it hasn't worked out good for me at all because had I just swallowed my pride and been with you from the get go then I wouldn't have been with Triston nor would I be in the mess I'm in now. I'm not saying move back to the states or anything but I'm willing to give us a shot even if its long distance

Him: Buttercup

Me: if you already have someone in SA then its ok, I understand.

Him: may I say something now?

Me: ok

Him: no I don't have anyone in SA. Even if I wanted to I couldn't because I wasn't ready for anyone. Buttercup I want us to work and if it means me moving back here then so be it just as long as I have you in my life and not just as my daughter's mother but more than that. I love you Yolanda and for you I would cross oceans and quit everything. The real reason I even stayed longer than I had planned is because I enjoy seeing you every day. It lightens up my world and going back to SA would only mean I see less of you

Me: what about your job? You haven't even been there for 6 months

Him: I am a Land surveyor and an IT specialist... how hard could it be for me to get a job Buttercup

I chuckled, he was so confident but that's one of the things I love about him. I looked up at him and he planted a kiss on my lips and then broke it.

Him: lets sleep, you have work and Kendra needs to get ready for school

Me: ok then.

He kissed my head

Him: I love you Buttercup

Me: I love you too

You ever had sleep so good you don't even want to wake up for the next day because you fear that last night was a dream and if you wake up and carry on with today someone might just ruin the day for you? Well that's how good I slept in Miso's arms, with a sense of belonging for a change. I was happy. I was content. The best good morning/breakfast is not the one where you get a sweet lovey dovey text from Bae or the one where bae serves you breakfast in bed but instead its being had for breakfast by the one you love... does that make any sense? But then again love makes no sense right? Anyway Miso's tongue was on playing around on my clit making me feel all kinds of euphoria. Good God it felt good as he devoured me like his favourite food or the best thing he's ever tasted in this world. I couldn't help but let out a moan of his name with my eyes still closed. I was enjoying the moment no lie

Him: Good morning

I didn't even respond. Instead I pushed his head deep in between my legs, I could feel it coming, I could feel my orgasm build up as he went in deeper and I caressed my boobs because the sensation was too damn good. Oh God I could get used to waking up like this I swear. I let it all out and he cleaned me with his tongue which you would swear he went to some school to learn what he just did right now with. he came up to my face and leaned in so close I could smell my juices in his mouth, he was balancing his hands on either side of my face. He was so handsome, so sexy, so hot... God what other word can I use to describe how good this man before me looked?

Him: how are you?

Me: good. Great.

That was probably one of the best orgasms I've felt in a long time... a month is long trust me and with Triston I've had to fake orgasm every time we had sex, but with Miso they just come-cum* pun intended* naturally you know. Miso always knows which spots to hit. I just looked at him just taking him in like this, me at his mercy and him knowing very well the power he holds over me. he leaned in and kissed me, I could taste myself on his lips... not really a good taste but then again come on guys, this man makes everything taste good with those lips of his. Ok I sound obsessed but you can't blame me, I'm in love all over again. I am reminded of what used to be and what

could be if I don't ruin things which I'm not planning to do. I lowered his boxers with the help of my feet until they were in his ankles while we were still kissing. His manhood sprung free and I played with it with my hands, he felt bigger than the last time I checked. I could feel his muscles tense up and I decided to flip us over because I wanted to take control. I went down leaving a trail of wet kisses all the way to his big and thick shaft. I swallowed hard, I don't remember him this big I swear or maybe it's been that long since I last saw it. I gagged in between making him call out my name and to me that was motivation to keep going until he exploded in my mouth, I couldn't swallow all of his juices thou. I turned my back on him and got on top reverse cowgirl and did my thing, he switched things up and we were both kneeling on the bed with him behind me caressing my boobs with one hand and the other playing with my clit. I don't know how many times I orgasmed but when we finally laid down to rest I could barely catch my breath. I can't remember the last time I had sex this good, this was what I call a real exercise. He pulled me to his chest and kissed my head.

Him: I missed this

Me: me too

Him: I love you

Me: to the moon and stars back

He chuckled

Him: don't let Imi hear you say that

I chuckled. Our daughter can be very jealous and she gets it from her father. The whole I love you to the moon and stars and back thing is only hers and I's thing and should she hear me say it to someone else then she'll sulk the whole day.

Chapter 43

Life was going good except being harassed by Triston and his soon to be wife... I got an invitation to the wedding which is this weekend, I still don't understand why they invited me because I am not interested in going and with Miso back in SA... I'm just not going. It wasn't easy convincing him to go back to work but I finally made him see logic and after a whole lot of convincing I managed to get him to leave. We decided on taking things slow and making us work without letting anyone know about us. let's just say we happy this way. We call each other every day and he makes me the happiest I have ever been. I was at work on a Thursday and Bridge, Marcy and I were planning on going for a late lunch after work to just cool down and let loose a bit you know. my phone rang and I checked the screen and it was Miso face-timing me. I answered same time.

PC

Him: Buttercup

Me: Hey Bubbles

Him: how are you today?

Me: I'm ok honey just swamped with work. How are you?

Him: I miss you so much it's not even funny

Me: I miss you too babe

Him: can't you take a week off and come this side?

Me: you know I want to but I can't

Him: why do I feel unloved right now?

Me: never. Even if I wanted to unlove you I wouldn't be able to.
You my everything

He smiled making me smile too. God I missed him so much.

Him: stop tryna flirt with me

Me: at least I'm flirting with what's mine

Him: aren't we confident much

Me: that's because I know you mine and mine alone.

Him: I love it when you confident

I smiled

Him: so I've been job hunting

Me: oh

Him: yeah and I found a few positions for you. Even Bess is offering something in your position

Me: you want me to move to SA?

Him: would it be a bad idea though? I mean you get to be away from Triston and your mentally ill sister

Me: and away from my family

Him: you don't have to sell your house that way when we come to visit we have a place to stay

Me: Miso

Him: before you say no. The pay is negotiable and with your qualifications you are worth every penny

He was right. in the past few years I went back to school part time to increase my qualifications and I am now a Dr in Accounting... if that makes any sense. I am currently working as the CFO of the company I'm in and I wouldn't accept any position lower than this one so whatever Miso saw

Advertisement

it had better be in this level or else I'm sorry I can't.

Him: look we have great schools around here for Kendra

Me: babe can I think about this

Him: what's there to think about?

Me: everything Miso. My whole life is here and I can't just up and leave. I mean I love you and I want to be where you are but for me to just up and leave like that? What about my parents? My siblings? My friends?

Him: I understand your concerns Landa but please just consider this. I'm tired of this traveling back and forth all the time and not having to see you guys every day. It sucks Buttercup. I really want you here

Me: why don't you just move back here

Him: were you not the one who told me go back to SA? Yolanda

Me: Miso moving is not as easy as it seems

Him: you think I don't know that

Me: I know you didn't call me for us to argue and I don't want to argue with you about this please

Him: fine. Enjoy the rest of your day

Me: Miso

Him: Bye Buttercup

End Of PC

I sat there with my phone in my hand. Miso couldn't be doing this to me, not like this and definitely not now of all times. I only just recently got the promotion about a month ago.

"Miss Graham you have a visitor"

I looked up and that was my PA... yes I got a PA because the workload was just too much and I needed a helping hand.

Me: A visitor? Who?

Her: he won't say. He says he's here to take you out for lunch

A smile formed on my lips. It could be Miso or it could be my brother. Reason I say Miso is because he is very much capable of just rocking up unannounced. It's been three months since he left and he would visit us every two weeks a month and he recently left so who knows. Yes, we just had an argument but it's possible that he's here. I know my guy. I just hope it's really him so we can patch up whatever this is. She smiled

Her: so should I let him in?

Me: of cause

I walked to the office bathroom and fixed myself up for either of them. When I was done I walked out and he was sitting on my chair facing the other direction.

Me: ey you

He turned the chair

Him: Hey Lala

My facial expression changed immediately. It was Triston. I was super bored and super pissed. He was smiling like someone who just got some.

Me: what the hell are you doing here?

He got up and walked up to me and I moved back

Him: you didn't RSVP so I came to see you. How are you? I see you and that guy of yours are back together.

Me: WHY TRISTON? I don't want to see you

Him: because Yolanda I want to see you there. Seemingly the texts I sent you weren't doing anything

Me: all my teenage life I've been threatened using my sister so what makes you think that it's going to work now?

He sat down and patted next to him on the couch in my office. I looked at him

Him: I don't bite

Me: but you beat up women right?

Him: no I don't. You see the thing with your sister... she doesn't like you much. After she lost her mother she made it her mission to get back at you. She blames you for her mother's death

Me: what?

Him: yep. Yolanda I love you. I know you don't believe me but I've fallen in love with you these past few months and losing you has turned me into this monster I've become. I knew you didn't love me back but I loved you anyway with hopes that you

would love me in return. I thought that maybe threatening you would get us back together

Me: and Ivy?

Him: I can't end things with Ivy. We getting married in a few days

Me: well then best of luck with everything. please leave.

He got up and came to me and I stood my ground. I wasn't going to be afraid of him. not now. not anymore.

Him: Yolanda I tried to be civil with you but I guess there's no reasoning with you.

Me: Triston get out

I said attempting to go to the door but he grabbed my arm. His grip was so tight I could feel my bones crushing.

Him: seeing that there's no reasoning with you then I guess I'll have to do things my way.

He threw me to the couch and then got on top of me. he held my hands above my head

Me: leave me alone

Him: I tried to play nice with you Lala. I really did

Me: Triston please

Him: we going to make a deal or else I'll go after Kendra and I know very well that you would do anything for her. You are going to get back together with me and end things with that boyfriend of yours or I swear to God you will never see your daughter again.

He looked at me as I was tongue tied.

Him: Think about your daughter's safety Yolanda and just how much she means to you. And also that sister of yours because I know that despite what you say you will always love her and if you don't take me up on my offer, I will go after everyone you love and care about. I'd hate for Bridget to get into an accident while giving birth.

Chapter 44

1 YEAR LATER

I sent Kendra to SA to her dad. Now I know I had an option to move to SA with her but I chose not to. Miso tried to talk me out of this but I needed to keep my family and my loved ones safe and this was the only way to. After Triston's visit I got another visit from Ivy and based on what she told me Triston is not just a doctor but he is part of The Spritz. He is their doctor and he is very much covered by them so running away won't get me anywhere instead I'll leave my life on the run and I'm not ready for that. I rather stay and fight for my life rather than to put everyone I love in danger. I have seen the stories about these people and I've read the papers and the things they are capable of are beyond anyone. The Government ain't got nothing on them and he himself relies on them in hiding his business so who am I to them really? I was engaged to be married to him and my daughter or Miso was not going to attend my funeral-I mean wedding. My wedding was in two days time. Miso and I tried to double cross him but instead Bridget got into an accident but she and the baby survived thank God so from there on we decided it's best we just work on trying to bring this guy down no matter how long it takes us or what it takes us. Click who is Miso's sister's husband has been MIA so there's no way we could try get his help because at

least if we had him on our side then at least this mess would have died down already. I was in my room calling my mother who was attending the wedding, she would be landing tomorrow morning. Ivy walked in. Ivy has been Triston's doormat

Advertisement

I on the other hand am treated like a princess but he also loses his cool with me at times and I fear that one day he will hit me even though he hasn't laid a hand on me yet but he did get me to quit work and go work at the hospital just so he could keep an eye on me and as for Ivy she is the wife that does everything but still gets a beating if something happens. Not that I have not stood up for her because I have a lot of times and he always promises to stop but he never really did until I threatened to kill myself if he didn't stop and ever since then he hasn't hit her. Started to get the idea that he is obsessed with me.

Me: hey

Her: hi

She sat on the bed. Triston made me move in with them and at first things between Ivy and I were rocky ok rocky doesn't even begin to describe what was going on because she hated my guts to a point where she poisoned my food and I landed up in hospital and because of that Triston landed her in hospital, but

we've come a long way from since then and our relationship has improved I guess. I think its because she knows I'm all she has.

Me: you ok?

Her: I just hate that you in this mess

Me: I got myself in this mess Ivy

Her: but Lala you could have ran away

Me: then live my life on the run? I cant put my daughter through that Ivy

Her: I understand that but now your daughter is miles away and you barely even see her

Me: things are better off this way Ivy. She's safe

Her: I admire you sis. You stronger than anyone I know

Me: I don't have a choice

Her: need help with anything?

Me: everything is covered. I just need to show up

Her: I'm sorry sis

Me: you don't have to apologise for anything Ivy. I've forgiven you for everything sis

I said pulling her in for a hug and she returned it with teary eyes. she was sincere and so was i.

Me: don't cry please

Her: I hate myself for everything you've had endure because of me

Me: you my little sister.

We broke the hug and I wiped her tears with my thumbs but the tears wouldn't stop. We were disturbed by my phone ringing and we both looked at the screen and Triston's picture appeared

Her: I will leave you to it. you know how he gets

Me: I guess

She walked out and I answered.

PC

Me: hey

Him: Babe where were you and why weren't you answering?

Me: I just got out of the bathroom

Him: oh ok. what are you up to?

Me: I'm going to go make something to eat. What are you up to?

Him: please make something for me too while you at it. I'm on my way

Me: uhm ok babe

Him: When is Kendra coming?

Me: she's busy with School babe

Him: I told you we should get married when its holidays

Me: yeah well her father wouldnt let her come this side alone

Him: well then come holidays we can go fetch her

Me: lets have this conversation when you back okay. Wouldn't want you getting into an accident now

Him: you have a point. I love you

Me: love you too

Him: who does?

Me: I love you too

Him: bye now

End Of PC

I didn't even respond any further and just dropped the call and called mom as I was going to before. I dialled her number and she answered

PC

Her: daughter

Me: Mother

Her: to what do I owe this call?

Me: you make it sound like I never call you

Her: ever since you moved in with this guy we barely have our talks and I never see you when I'm in town anymore because you always busy. Yolanda talk to me

Me: its nothing mom

Her: I'm not stupid Yolanda. Is this guy abusive?

Me: no mom he's not. He's very loving

Her: how do you go on and marry someone married to your little sister?

Me: mom please

Her: fine I wont ask any further questions. Why did you call?

Me: I wanted to know when you guys will be landing?

Her: tomorrow later on

Me: I thought you were coming earlier

Her: something came up so we'll be there later on

Me: oh...

Her: bye Lala

Me: bye mom. I love you and travel safely

Her: bye Lala

End Of PC

Yes this what my relationship with mom has become. At least my brother and his wife still love me and are still with me despite everything. Mom never liked Triston and for me to marry him... Hell broke loose. I got up and headed downstairs to start preparing something but instead I got there Ivy already making something to eat.

Me: your husband is on his way back

Her: oh

Me: yep and he says he's hungry

Her: I'm sure he wants something made by your hand

I chuckled and so did she.

Her: when last did you speak to Ken?

Me: early this morning. She said to greet you

Her: ahh man tell her I greeted back. She's growing up so fast

Me: yeah she is. I miss her so much

Her: one day you two will be reunited and it will be the happiest day of both ya'lls life

I giggled thinking about seeing her again and touching her and smelling her shampoo. God I miss my daughter. I've even lost a bit of weight, I went from a size 32 to a 28... that's how unhappy I am. I think I've hit rock bottom because I'm just not happy at all. What mother would be happy to see their daughter on long holidays only? I decided to dial her number

PC

Her: Buttercup

Me: hey beautiful how are you?

Her: I'm ok. I miss you

Me: I miss you too baby

Her: when are you coming this side? When will I see you?

Me: I will be there for holidays.

Her: you promise?

Me: I promise

Her: but I want to come to your wedding

Me: I know and I promise that when you here we will make a wedding specially for you

Her: really?

Me: yes really baby

I could hear in her voice that she was excited and she couldn't wait just like me.

Me: I love you ok.

Her: and I love you to the moon and back

Me: I love you to the stars and back. Wheres daddy?

"Honey I'm home"

I lowered the phone and Triston was walking in with a bunch of flowers. He kissed my cheek

Me: honey I have to go

Her: ok mommy. Bye

End Of PC

He gave me a look expecting me to explain who it was I was talking to. this is not the life I signed up for.

Chapter 45

Ivy: beautiful flowers

Him: I'm sorry about last night

He said giving her the flowers

Her: I'll put these in water

I looked at her as she walked away to the sink. What the hell happened last night? Triston smiled at me

Him: so who were you talking to?

Me: my daughter. What happened last night?

Him: nothing babe

Me: Ivy?

Her: nothing Red

Him: I'm hungry. What are we eating?

Ivy: I made sandwiches, I didn't think you'd be back this early

Him: its ok babe. Let me go change quickly ok and I'll be back now now

He kissed her cheek and then walked out. I looked at Ivy waiting for an explanation but she avoided eye contact with me. I was going to get the truth out of her one way or the other.

Me: Yvette

Her: Red

She turned to look at me with a smile

Me: What did Triston do to you last night?

Her: nothing. I'm fine

Me: fine then don't talk.

I put my phone on the counter and stormed off to his room. His stuff is mostly in Ivy's room and he comes to mine every now and then... ok I'm lying he mostly sleeps in my room unless he's mad at me or something. I walked into their room and he was in the closet topless looking for a t-shirt

Me: What the hell did you do to her?

Him: nothing.

Me: I'm done with you! I'm leaving.

Him: Landa please.

I walked away and he held my arm.

Him: Landa please. Please don't leave me

Me: you hit her didn't you?

Him: it was a mistake I swear

Me: you don't hit someone by mistake Triston.

I half shouted. I was pissed. Now I know I threaten him with leaving but is there really leaving him? I know that me threatening to leave ticks him off and I have him at my mercy.

Me: you hit my sister after you promised to never lay a hand on her. I told you that if you ever hit her then I would leave

Him: Landa it was a mistake. Ivy and I are fine now. We good. She's forgiven me, why can't you do the same? Look lets go out tonight so I can show you just how sorry I am

Me: fuck you!

I pulled my arm away from him and went downstairs with him following me like a lost puppy. I grabbed the nearest car keys and drove off. I needed to be out of that house or else I would go mad. I parked inside Bridget's yard and went to the door and knocked, she answered after a while.

Her: what a nice surprise

We shared a hug and then broke it

Her: please come in

Me: how are you? Where are my nephews?

Her: I just put them to sleep

Me: both of them? A toddler and a new born? How?

She laughed

Her: magic! How are you? How are the wedding preps?

Me: I am going crazy Bri. I just want to die already

Her: you've held on for so long Landa. Don't give up now. you have a daughter looking forward to seeing her mother again

Me: the more I stay in that house the more I lose myself. I don't know who the hell I am anymore. It's like I've lost my identity and I'm nothing but Triston's fiancé. I hate it Bri. I hate myself.
God

Her: Landa calm down. Look at me

She held my shoulders and made me look at her. I was really defeated. I was crying for all the times I didn't cry. I have witnessed this guy beat my sister up more than once and I've had to step in all the time. except the time I was in a hospital bed because of her. I tried getting her to run away but she loves him. I don't know why she does but she says she loves him and she can't get herself to leave him. who am I to interfere there? I was mad at a lot of things and not seeing my daughter, holding her, being with her and just hearing her bickering with her father was one of the reasons I was crying.

Her: Landa you've held on for so long. Don't give up now, remember the reason you even got yourself into this in the first place ok? You doing this for your daughter and as long as

Triston is this person he is then your daughter will never be safe. You almost there

Me: feels like I'm not getting anywhere with him

Her: you have your sister to help you with everything. you so close

I took a deep breath and let it out. God why was this so difficult? I was working with MJ Yanga Bess, Miso's brother and he was helping me build a case on Triston that would lock him up for years but it's not easy getting information out of someone like Triston. And with Click MIA we have nothing to go on so far.

Her: you can do this ok? I know you can

Me: has MJ said anything to you?

MJ and I were communicating through Bridget and Marcy because then Triston wouldn't suspect a thing.

Her: he's been digging and he and Miso haven't gotten anywhere just yet. The guy's information is way too encrypted and they've tried just about everything but he's security is tighter than they had anticipated

Me: yeah well I wouldn't expect anything less

Her: maybe you can try get his laptop or something

Me: no ways. He would kill me

Her: MJ said he would drop off some USB thingy Miso made and that things is supposed to record all of his data the minute its installed on his laptop

Me: Triston has two laptops

Advertisement

how am I supposed to know which is which? Who's to say his things are in this laptop?

Her: do you perhaps have a better idea? You want to be with your daughter don't you? We don't have another choice here
Lala

Me: I guess.

Her: you need a glass of wine

I chuckled. She knew me all too well

Her: doctors' orders.

I nodded while laughing, I sat on the high chairs and watched her as she poured us wine

Her: so are you ready for marriage?

Me: is that a trick question?

She laughed as she handed me my glass and she sat opposite me

Her: it doesn't hurt to ask

Me: I can see how much this is hurting Ivy

Her: Ivy will thank you for this one day

Me: I hope so. I really hope so ey

Her: she will. I mean had she not been involved with this psycho then she wouldn't be hurting like this now would she?

Me: I guess

Her: she'll thank you.

I gulped my wine at one go. God I needed this, it's been a while since I drank any. Triston doesn't approve of me drinking especially now that we trying to get pregnant... his words not mine. If only he knew, I got my tubes tied the day I decided to get into whatever this is. I don't want a baby or anything linking me to this monster. But with the way he's so attached to me I sometimes think I'm pregnant.

Her: how's the baby making process going?

I laughed

Me: really Bridget?

Her: you sure he doesn't suspect anything?

Me: at the moment no. he hasn't even suggested checking me out

Her: you playing with fire Yolanda

Me: I know but I don't want a baby by him. I would die!

Her: whatever you say then.

Me: I'm sleeping over

Her: you not even going to ask me?

Me: you my sister in law, why should I?

Her: and you don't think he'll come here?

Me: nah. I left my phone which has a tracker in it

Her: the car Lala. What if he tracks the car?

Me: then let's drive and go dump it somewhere

Her: you want this guy to kill you I swear

Me: he wouldn't dare. Come lets go

Her: let me go call the nanny first.

Me: ok babe

She walked out. their nanny lived in the pool house at the back.

I went to the car to wait for her, she was going to follow me with her car and then after we would drive back together. I

know for a fact that he hasn't tried tracking it just yet. We dumped it next to a nearby forest and then we drove to Yonda's house and he was back already. I greeted and we conversed lightly. Triston called Bridget while we were cooking. She put him on speaker

PC

Him: Bridge

Her: Triston

Him: I'm looking for my future wife, any idea where she might be?

Her: what do you mean you looking for Lala? What the hell did you do to her?

I gave her look and she held back laughter. He sounded so worried it was almost cute.

Him: she just stormed off. I'm worried about her because I just found the car she left in and she wasn't in it. What if something happened to her

Her: if anything happens to her Triston. I swear to God

Him: I swear I didn't do anything to her Bridget. Please believe me. We had a little argument and she stormed off

Her: have you tried calling her?

Him: she left her phone and its late. I can't even file a missing person's report

Her: you better pray that she's alive wherever she is

Him: please call me if you hear anything

Her: sure.

Him: thanks Bri. Bye

her: bye

***End of PC**

She ended the call and I laughed my ass off. Bridget should have gone into acting I swear, even I was convinced that I was missing with the way she handled the call.

Chapter 46

PRESENT – THERAPISTS OFFICE

Her: That was your opportunity to run away and go live freely

I gave a sarcastic chuckle. What the hell does freely mean?

Me: freely? and leave my sister with that monster? I'm sorry Doc but despite everything we went through she was still my sister and I wasn't going to leave her with that monster

Her: but you left her with him. who is to say he didn't take out his frustrations on her?

Me: I guess I just kept hoping that he wouldn't harm her. I just needed a break from everything. I needed a break from him. I needed to get away from the both of them

Her: I hear you and I'm not here to judge you but all I'm hearing are excuses. Let's go back to your sister poisoning you

Me: what about that?

Her: I can't imagine it was easy to forgive her after something so evil. She tried to get rid of you Yolanda

Me: she was hurting that's all. I mean after what Triston had put her through, I didn't blame her because I think I would have done the same

Her: with goes back to my theory. Someone of your nature, so loving and so forgiving is not capable of such a murder Yolanda. You here to protect Yvette

Me: Triston had the power to turn you into something you not

Her: your sister was capable of poisoning her own flesh and blood, who's to say she wasn't capable of such a murder? Lala you are in here being ill-treated by people belonging to the Spritz because of what they believe you did to one of them

Me: Doc please

Her: Yolanda we are trying to get you out of here and if you are not careful you will be in here for life. Do you not want to get out and back to your daughter?

Me: I do want to see her again

Her: then do this for her. your daughter needs you

Me: and what about the baby my sister is carrying? Does he/she not need a mother?

Her: why should her baby be more important than yours?

Me: maybe because I know that my daughter has the best family anyone could ever ask for.

Her: see what I mean? You not this person. You don't belong here Yolanda.

Me: I appreciate what you are trying to do doc but this is my fate She shook her head.

Her: your fate? Yolanda we need to convince the judge that you are not capable of doing that to a person. Despite your history but you just not capable. I was assigned to you so that we can see whether or not you guilty and from what I've gathered, you not.

Me: what happened to guilty until proven innocent

Her: that's what we trying to prove here

Me: your innocence

Her: ok. This is enough for today

Me: thank you doc. I will see you in our next session

She nodded and I got up and met up with two guards to take me back to the hospital room I was in, honestly I didn't see the point of me being in here because I was fine to go back to the cell but I'm sure MJ had something to do with me being here. We got to the room and there she was, black hair like her father's with my eyes and nose. She was another version of me with black hair instead of red. She ran to me and gave me a bone crushing hug which was painful AF but I didn't mind because I missed this. the guards gave me a pass on her hugging me.

Her: mommy

I found myself crying, I had missed her so much.

Me: hello baby

I broke the hug and looked at her with my teary eyes and she was crying. The tears wouldn't stop coming out

“Buttercup”

God that voice. Even now it still did wonders to me

Me: Miso

He just stared at me without saying anything. He felt pity for me and he didn't even have to say it. I looked like a mess... there's no makeup in prison honey. I had a blue eye and a stab wound. I couldn't stand the look on his face so I shifted my eyes on my daughter

Me: please don't cry

Her: I just miss you so much

Me: I know baby and I miss you just as much

Her: when are you getting out of here mommy?

Me: uncle MJ is working on that

Him: and he won't rest until you out of here

I looked up at him

Me: how are you?

I walked to the bed with her arm around my waist and mine around her neck.

Him: fine. Buttercup what happened to you?

Me: it's nothing. I'm fine

He shook his head. See why I didn't want to see him? I can't stand to see the pain in his eyes. He feels like he could have done something to protect me from all of this and he somewhat blames himself for me being here even though he isn't.

Me: don't look at me like that, there was nothing you could have done Miso

He didn't respond

Me: could you please go get mommy some water honey

Her: yes, mommy

She walked out and left me with her father

Him: Yolanda what happened to you? Who did this to you?

Me: Miso I'm fine

Him: is that why you refused for us to come see you?

Me: I didn't want you guys to see me like this. especially her

Him: she wanted to see her mother. Sometimes I find her crying herself to sleep because she misses you so much Yolanda.

I wiped the tear that managed to escape my eye

Him: Yolanda you have to work with Yanga to help get you out of here

Me: Miso

Him: No Yolanda. Your daughter needs you. I wasn't cut out to play your role for you. You are her mother Yolanda and not me

Me: Miso I

He looked at me and shook his head. I didn't even know whether to continue or not because he seemed to have heard enough

Me: all evidence points to me

Him: that's not true. You just made it seem like it

Me: Miso

Him: Can you for once just think about your daughter

He half shouted startling me. I was thinking about my daughter but what about the one Ivy is carrying?

Me: Ivy is pregnant. She doesn't belong here

Him: and you do? Yolanda we talking about the same person who tried to kill you a year ago

I looked down. Kendra walked in with a glass of water.

Miso: Princess say your goodbyes to mommy so we can leave

Her: but daddy

Him: visiting hours are over princess. I'll wait outside

He said walking out. she handed me my water and I put it next to me on the table

Her: mommy I don't want to leave you here

Me: I know princess but you have to leave princess. Daddy is waiting for you

Her: I love you to the moon and back

Me: and I love you to the stars and back.

We shared a hug and I kissed her head before she walked out to her father. Miso can be so unreasonable when he wants to. I get it he's hurting but so am I but I can't throw Ivy under the bus. What happens to the child she is carrying? I got in bed and decided to drink my pain meds and sleep it off. Seems like tomorrow I was going back to my cell mates. I cant say I was excited though because then it would be back to reality.

Chapter 47

I walked in and he was pacing up and down the lounge like someone who didn't get any sleep. It was the next day in the morning, he was on the phone and he sounded pissed. I closed the door behind me and he turned to me

Him: she just walked in. I'll call you later

I walked past him and he grabbed my arm.

Him: where the fuck were you?

He was even pink with anger such that I wanted to laugh but I composed myself. I was a little tipsy too because last night was too lit with my sister in law. Yonda drove us to the club and he requested us a cab in the early hours of morning, said Bri and I needed to have some fun even if it's for a few hours. I admire the kind of husband my brother is, he's so carefree and very loving. I looked at his hand on my arm and then up at him

Him: answer me dammit!

Me: I needed to breathe. Now please let go of my arm you hurting me

Him: and you couldn't call?

Me: how? My phone is right on the table

He raised his hand in attempt to slap me but he stopped himself in his tracks. I raised an eyebrow. Honestly I thought he would act faster than he did, I thought he'd throw me against the wall the minute I walked in but he kept his cool.

Him: Where were you?

Me: at the club downtown

Him: a club? Yolanda what the fuck is your problem huh? do you not want to marry me?

Me: I'm glad you asked because I don't want to marry you Triston. I'm only still here because you promised you wouldn't hurt anyone in my family if I married you.

He tightened his grip

Me: Triston let go of me

Him: Yolanda you are mine.

Me: you say you love me but this, this is not love. You don't fucking hit someone you love Triston

Him: how else am I supposed to earn your respect Yolanda? I've tried everything but you always do something to piss me off.

Me: maybe if you let me go then you'd earn my respect.

Him: I am your husband and you are going to respect me at all costs

Me: keep dreaming Mr.

I was so calm and he was so pissed. He looked at me and chuckled, he let go of my arm.

Him: I should keep dreaming huh? Ok Yolanda. We'll play this your way.

He looked like I a lunatic

Advertisement

I was scared as to what he meant. What he was planning on doing. He walked upstairs and I followed him. he walked into his room with Ivy and he uncovered the blankets and pulled her by her hair

Me: Triston what the fuck is your problem?

I tried pulling him away from my screaming little sister.

Me: Triston please

Him: I tried to play nice with you but you Yolanda. You just like doing things your own way right?

Me: Triston please stop you hurting her

He threw her on the floor and he walked towards her but I ran and got in front of him

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Yolanda I've done everything your way but still you not satisfied. You never happy so I'll go back to doing things my way

Me: Triston please don't do this. We getting married tomorrow and the last thing we want is my maid of honour unable to show her face to our guests because of this. I'm sorry ok. I promise I will do things your way

Him: I don't want you to do things my way Yolanda. All I ask of you is that you return to me the love I'm giving you

I was tongue tied. How do you make yourself love a monster? I really need to get this information before I die or Ivy dies. He seemed calmer. I walked over to him and cupped his face

Me: Triston I'm sorry

Him: I don't want your apology Yolanda

He half scolded me.

Me: You want me to return to you the love you give me but you not giving me any reason to fall in love with you. Triston you're a monster and I'm scared of you. How am I supposed to love someone I'm afraid of?

Him: tell me what you want me to do and I'll do it Yolanda.

He went down on his knees and holding my hands sitting on his heels. With tears in his eyes. in my mind all I could think of was not to fall for his crocodile tears. Nobody changes over night

Him: I will do anything for you

Me: you can start by treating Ivy the same way you treat me or if you so tired of her then end things with her and set her free

Him: not while she's carrying my baby. When she gives birth then she can have all the freedom in the world

I looked at Ivy. She's pregnant? Why didn't she tell me? she was curled up in a corner just looking at us. God what did I get myself in to?

Me: You pregnant?

She nodded slowly. I involuntarily slapped him. How dare he manhandle a pregnant woman? I was so angry. I didn't stop at one slap but I hit him continuously and he didn't stop me at all. I was hitting him for every pain he has caused me, every pain he has caused my sister, not being able to be with my daughter. Just everything bad that has happened in this period of time. when I felt I had hit him enough I walked out of their room and went to lock myself up in his. Ivy needed to get away from Triston one way or the other. She just needed to get away from him. Something needed to be done. We can't keep living like this. I was not going to marry this psychopath, I'm sorry I can't. I sat on the floor and buried my face in my hands crying. I heard him knocking tirelessly but I didn't respond, he knocked until he

probably figured it was pointless because after a while he had stopped I heard Ivy's soft knock

Her: Red please open the door

I kept quiet

Her: he's gone Red. Please open the door.

I was hesitant but I dragged myself to open for her and first thing she did was throw herself at me.

Her: Red I am so sorry you in this mess

I didn't respond.

Her: We can't keep living like this. We have to get rid of him

I broke out of her arms and looked at her expecting her to laugh or giggle or chuckle or something. She couldn't possibly be serious right?

Me: What?

Her: Red He'll never set me free. I'm not pregnant, I lied

Me: I don't understand

Her: the home test was a false alarm

I looked at her trying to make some sense out of what she had just said. So she wasn't pregnant?

Me: you not pregnant?

Her: I just wanted him to stop hitting me. I knew that the only way he would stop was if I said I was pregnant

Me: Yvette!

Her: look he will be back soon. Red we need to kill him

Me: Are you insane?

Her: Nobody has to know. I have been googling ways to get rid of the body without a trace and

Me: whoa whoa whoa! Yvette have you any idea how insane you sound right now? Besides even if we tried to kill him the \$pritz would come after us all our lives. I have a daughter and they would go after her

Her: they wouldn't go anywhere near Kendra

Me: The Besses are good people. They don't deal shady nor are they associated with any shady dealings so there's no way in hell my daughter is safe from the \$pritz. I'm not doing this with you Yvette. We could get life in prison. We need to gather as much information about him, something that could bring him down for a very long time

Her: Prison is his home Red

Me: depends which Prison he is in sis. We just need to get some dirt on him that's all

Her: how?

Me: he trusts you more than he trusts me. I need his personal computer which has all of his stuff

Her: I don't know the password

Me: you share a room with him Ivy. Try getting the password or have him give it to you unlocked

Her: and then?

Me: you'll insert the flash drive and then give it to me when you done.

Her: I don't know

Me: Ivy you trust me don't you?

Her: I do b...

Me: then let me handle this please. You owe me this much

She nodded and took the flash

Me: keep this safe and make sure he doesn't see it ok?

She nodded. Let's just hope Ivy is smart enough to pull this off without getting caught. She walked out of my room and locked myself inside again. God I hope this works. It was the beginning of November and soon the year would be ending.

Chapter 48

I took my laptop and started typing an apology email to the people I had invited for my fiasco of a wedding which wouldn't be taking place tomorrow. I emailed the caterers and everyone responsible for planning this wedding and then logged into my skype to call Miso. I needed to talk to him. Yes we do talk through Kendra's phone and our conversations are at a minimum because I live with an insecure ASS! He was online, lucky me. He answered.

VC

Me: hey

Him: this is a nice surprise. Have you been crying? Buttercup what's wrong?

Me: I can't marry him Miso.

Him: Buttercup

Me: I know you tried talking me out of it and you said we should run away together and I was a fool not to take you up on your offer because this life

Him: Buttercup calm down ok. Just breathe

I took a few deep breaths

Him: Kendra is almost done with school. We can take off when she's finished with school ok? I promise you I will get you out of that house

Me: but he's going to find us

Him: Buttercup let me worry about it ok and you focus on getting that information

Me: I gave the flash to Ivy, he trusts her more than he trusts

Him: do you trust Ivy?

Me: she wants to kill him Miso... I trust her

Him: you trust too easily Buttercup

Me: I wish I didn't but after today.

Him: what happened? Did he hurt you?

Me: no. he hasn't been able to bring himself to hit me or something like that. But Ivy, he just... Miso I can't leave my sister here with this guy.

Him: Yolanda

I knew he was about to give a lecture which I wouldn't like because every time he gets all serious I go from being Buttercup to Yolanda.

Him: Your sister chose to be with Triston, you are with him because it's something you have to do

Me: so what are you saying? That I just let my little sister to fend for herself

Him: she once tried to kill you Yolanda

Me: Miso

Him: No Yolanda. If that girl really loved, you or even cared about you the way you do her then she wouldn't have poisoned you. You wouldn't have landed in hospital. You would still be carrying our baby

I kept quiet and swallowed really hard. How did he even know about the baby? I didn't know I was pregnant until my doctor told me that I lost the baby after being poisoned. I was mad yeah sure but I begged my doctor not to tell Triston or anyone for that matter. How Miso got hold of these news I also don't know.

Him: you thought I didn't know?

I slowly shook my head

Him: why didn't you tell me Yolanda?

Me: I just wanted to forget.

Him: and how's it working out?

Me: how did you find out?

Him: does it matter? I just know ok and I don't understand how you would just let your sister be after what she put you through Yolanda. She deserves to go down with Triston. Yolanda

Me: Miso please. Please let's just

Him: what? Stop talking about this? forget it ever happened? You can't run away from everything Yolanda. Your sister is just as bad as this guy and you refuse to see it.

I kept quiet

Him: I love you but sometimes I just wish I could kill you

I still didn't respond. I don't know why I'm so forgiving. Trust me I've tried not to be but I can't seem to. Yes, things were difficult when I found out I had lost a child I didn't even know I was carrying but she was sincere and she did everything to earn my forgiveness, even though it took us months but we worked things out and I kept my miscarriage to myself. Even Bridget doesn't know because if she did then hell would have broken loose on Ivy.

Me: I'm sorry

I said with tears rolling down involuntary. I stayed in the hospital for a week and that was enough for me to mourn him/her and forget it ever happened so that when I get back to his house I would focus on other things. He shook his head

Him: I don't want your apology Yolanda. I want you to focus on yourself for once. I want you to focus on our daughter. She needs you more than Yvette needs you. This fighting you doing is supposed to be for your daughter and not your diabolical lunatic sister.

I didn't respond. I heard the door try to open.

Me: I have to go

Him: I love you Yolanda

Me: bye Miso

End Of VC

.

.

PRESENT DAY

I was in the doc's office.

Her: Yolanda

Me: yes doc

Her: you had a miscarriage?

I nodded

Her: and you still took the fall for her? Why?

Me: I don't know.

She shook her head. She wasn't writing anything down but instead she was using a tape recorder.

Her: hearing Miso speak the way he did to you, how did it make you feel about your sister?

Me: it changed nothing. I love Ivy and I live to protect her

Her: At some point you didn't live to protect her and your life was doing great. Yolanda it seems like this sister you've lived your life to protect wouldn't have done the same for you if roles were reversed

Me: what are you saying Doc?

Her: that your sister whom you think loves you don't love you the way you love her. You told me that this same sister whom you protecting poisoned you and you ended up with a miscarriage

Advertisement

this same sister once blamed you for the death of her mother who treated you like a sex slave, this same sister who would rather you go down for something she did instead of her.

Yolanda I don't know if you seeing the point I am trying to make here but seems to me like your sister has only ever taken advantage of your love for her because according to my

knowledge of siblings, you stick with each other and you always there to defend the other. Just think about what I'm saying ok?

I nodded. I didn't want to believe that Ivy would be that kind of person. Yeah sure maybe the doc has a point but she did those things out of reason. We ended our session on that note and then I was taken to the visitor's room to have a session with my lawyer. I was in the visitor's room with MJ to discuss my case and what it looks like. They uncuffed me and I sat opposite him.

Him: what happened to you?

Me: Yanga I'm fine ok

Him: no you are not. You limping and you have a blue eye

Me: I will be fine. What's up?

Him: you won't be staying here for long

Me: what are you saying? What do you mean?

Him: your boyfriend was an insecure Psychopath who had camera's planted all around the house after you moved in with him.

I looked at him

Him: we managed to obtain the footage from the house and it proves that you are innocent. Yolanda why did you lie to me? I'm your lawyer. You supposed to tell me the truth

Me: have you watched the tapes?

Him: just browsed through them.

Me: and Miso?

Him: let me worry about my brother Yolanda. Tell me why you didn't tell me? why did you hide the truth from me?

Me: because I belong here Yanga. I stabbed him

Him: it was self defence

Me: yes, but the court doesn't know that

Him: Triston was not only stabbed Yolanda, he was butchered and I know you, you are not capable of butchering a person.

I shrugged

Him: this is not going to work if you don't talk to me Yolanda. Your daughter needs you.

Me: she has her father

Him: her father is not you Yolanda

Me: I can't be a mother to her. I don't deserve to be a mother. What mother leaves her daughter for a man? All my life I vowed to never be a bad mother but instead I let myself become one. She's my daughter she shouldn't have had to live without me. I should have taken care of Triston earlier that way my daughter doesn't suffer. Things are better off this way

Yanga. Me here and her out there with people who would do anything for her

Him: everything you did Yolanda was for her. I don't know how you see it but to me that's what a mother does for their child. You did what you had to do in order to keep her safe from that monster. You're an amazing mother and Kendra is lucky to have you as a mother. Your sister is lucky to have a sister like you

Me: how is Ivy?

Him: she called me and she asked to take the stand

Me: what? No. She can't take the stand Yanga. She's close to popping

Him: so be it. She is the only shot we have at getting you out of here. Yolanda look at this.

He laid out a file for me with pictures of Ivy's bruises from when she got married to Triston, miscarriage reports (there was about 3 or 4), a lot of medical reports

Him: this is enough to reduce her sentence because this will show that she did it out of self defence

Me: she's pregnant. She wouldn't survive here

Him: take her baby when she gives birth and raise it for her. You don't belong here, she does. Yolanda your child needs her mother. She goes to bed crying most nights. She cannot stand it

and after seeing you like this yesterday she wouldn't stop crying

I kept quiet and wiped the tears in my eyes

Him: think about your daughter for once.

After the talk with Yanga I was taken back to the cell.

Chapter 49

I didn't respond because I knew it was him. Eventually I got out of my room only because I missed my phone and I missed talking to my daughter. I took my phone where I had left it and he was sitting in the lounge with Ivy laying on his chest. I didn't say anything

Him: Yolanda

I didn't respond instead I unlocked my phone and I had a dozen missed calls from Mom and everyone else. I'm sure people were wondering why I'd cancel the wedding the day before the actual wedding. I walked out calling mom

PC

Her: Yolanda I have been calling you

Me: hello mom. how are you?

Her: don't. just don't start with me Yolanda. What the hell is this?

Me: mom I'm good too thank you and how are you?

I could literally feel Triston's eyes on me but I told myself I wasn't going to turn at all

Her: Yolanda

Me: mom please

Her: I told you not to marry this guy to begin with. Miso loves you

Me: yes, mom and I love him just as much but this is something I have to do

Her: I don't understand what exactly it is you have to do Yolanda. This man is dangerous

Me: I know mom

She sighed

Her: well I'm glad you not marrying this man

Me: I can't marry him mom. He's a monster

Her: baby get out of that house and just come home

Me: Mom please

Her: no Yolanda. Miso says he can get you a job at Bess and then you can leave that hospital and be with your family. Don't you miss your family?

Me: you know I miss them mom. I just want to be with my daughter

Her: then leave that man Yolanda

Me: mom I should go. I'll see you later yeah?

Her: since I'm here might as well

Me: I love you mom

Her: I love you too baby

End Of PC

He cleared his throat and I turned to look at him

Him: so you serious about not going through with the wedding?

Me: yes

Him: what do I have to do for you to marry me Yolanda?

Me: nothing Triston because it will never happen. I would rather die than to marry you. Why am I here Triston? Why are you hell bent on marrying me?

Him: because Yolanda I love you. You're an amazing woman and I don't see myself leaving without you.

Me: you've been doing all of that long before I came into the picture Triston

Him: I am not letting you go Yolanda and that's that!

He hit the counter startling me. I looked at him and he seemed pissed, I think he was pissed for a lot of things but I just pressed a button

Me: we'll see about that.

I walked towards the exit which was where he was standing and he grabbed my arm and pulled me to him

Him: you not going anywhere!

Me: Triston live me alone

Him: NO. I've let you walk all over me for a long time now and I'm done Yolanda. Clearly I won't earn your respect so I'll take it.

He said pushing me to the counter but I landed on my hands. I turned around and I slapped him and that alone was like an invitation to a hot slap from me

Him: you not leaving me Yolanda

He said holding me by my neck and I held his hand trying to catch my breath which was running out. I couldn't breathe at all and he wasn't stopping. Where the hell was my sister when I needed her? I tried searching for a glass on the counter behind me and I got hold of a coffee mug and hit his head with it and it broke on him and he let go of me holding his head. I took a knife and pointed it at him

Him: what are you going to do with that?

Me: Triston stay away from me

He closed the kitchen door and locked it then walked towards me

Him: what are you going to do with that Yolanda huh? I've given you everything a woman could ask for but you're an ungrateful b*tch.

Me: Triston Stay away from me

I said moving back but he kept coming closer

Him: This sister of yours you pride yourself in protecting so much. where is she now huh? YVETTE

He shouted for her name but she didn't respond

Him: see what I mean? She doesn't care about you. She never did. She tried to kill you Yolanda and you still here still protecting her. She never loved you

I shook my head. Just then she knocked on the door behind him

Him: seems like I spoke too soon. Maybe we should invite her in.

I still didn't respond.

Me: Triston please can we just talk about this

Him: we beyond talking Yolanda. You planning on leaving me and I can't let you do that I'm sorry.

He got closer and I swung the knife at him and he stepped back a little

Me: I don't want to do this

Him: I did everything Yolanda but you don't listen. You refuse to see reason

I don't know how he managed to grab hold of me after the arguing we've been having but he got me and we struggled with the knife making me stab him on his stomach and he fell to the floor, I was so shocked I threw the knife on the floor and looked at my hands that had his blood on them. I watched him as he winced in pain. Ivy was still banging on the door. I ran to the door and opened.

Her: Lala what happened? You have blood!

Me: I.... I don't know what happened. One minute we arguing with the knife and then I stabbed him

Her: Oh my God.

Me: We have to rush him to the hospital

Her: NO!

I looked at her. I refuse to be murderer. That's not me I'm sorry

Her: We can't do that Red

Me: He's going to die

Her: Then let him.

I shook my head.

Me: No Yvette. We can't let him die

Her: if we don't kill him then he'll come after us.

Me: NO!

Her: Yolanda

Me: NO Yvette. I am not a murderer and I won't start now

Her: it was either you or him Lala

Me: I don't care. I am not a murderer Yvette.

Her: ok ok

She cupped my face.

Her: go get yourself cleaned up and I will drive him to the hospital myself

Me: you sure?

Her: yes. Come help me get him to the car

I nodded. I was still in shock that I stabbed a person. I am not used to this and I don't think it's something I ever want to do that in my life. It was painful to watch. I took off the shirt I was wearing which had blood stains and pressed it on where I had stabbed him

Me: the blood is red so I didn't hit anything fatal

We got out and placed him in the back seat of the car, he was half-conscious as we got him in the car and I put his hand on

top of the wound. Ivy got in the front seat and I went to get myself cleaned up and then cleaned up the stain on the floor, I looked for the knife but I couldn't find it.

Me: I thought I threw it on the floor

I said talking to myself. I looked around and it wasn't there at all

Advertisement

I went on my knees and searched under the fridge and everything that had space between it and the floor. I went to the sink and there wasn't any knife. Maybe Ivy washed it when she came to fetch her phone, I thought to myself. I Went upstairs to clean myself up and then went to his room and his laptop was unlocked and the flash was inserted in the USB slot... explains why Ivy didn't get there in time. I waited for it to finish and then I dialled Miso's number which I knew by heart. Only he can talk me down from the shock I'm in. He answered after a while. I didn't even care what time it was in SA I just needed to talk to him.

PC

Him: Buttercup

Me: hi

Him: you sound shaken. Are you ok?

Me: Miso I stabbed Triston. I swear I didn't do it on purpose, it was a mistake. Ivy's rushing him to the hospital as we speak

Him: Buttercup Breathe for me

I tried to breathe but I couldn't get over stabbing him. It was scary seeing him lying on that floor helpless, it's not me. I'm not this person

Me: I'm not a killer Miso. I didn't do it on purpose

Him: Ivy is rushing him to the hospital is she not? Let it be Buttercup

Me: I'm scared. What if he doesn't make it?

Him: he's going to be fine. Buttercup use this opportunity to pack up your things and go to your mother. She's in town, is she not?

Me: I have the information

Him: I'll call my brother and ask him to meet you at your old place

Me: ok thank you

Him: you don't need to thank me. just be safe ok. I will be there Monday

Me: and Kendra?

Him: I'll leave her with my aunt Asemahle

Me: ok then

Him: I love you Buttercup

Me: I love you too. kiss Kendra for me

Him: will do. Bye Buttercup

End Of PC

I called mom and asked her to come fetch me because I had no idea where my car keys were. Yes, I lived the life of being driven to and from work so yeah. She said she was on her way with an extra suitcase. She got here before Yvette got here. I called her and she answered saying she was still at the hospital waiting to hear so I told her I'd be there later. I needed to get out of here first. When I was done we dragged my bag to mom's car and then we drove to my old house and then I borrowed her car to go check on Triston at the hospital but Ivy and Triston weren't there. Ok

Chapter 50

PRESENT

Doc: Yolanda you didn't kill this person. How does a knife suddenly disappear?

Me: Ivy took it when she was supposedly taking him to the hospital

Her: so I'm assuming she butchered him on the way there?

Me: I don't know

Her: Yolanda I can't help you if you not willing to tell me everything.

I sighed

Me: I got a call from Ivy telling me she had been arrested for murdering Triston. So I went down to the station to turn myself in

Her: I don't understand

Me: I was the one that stabbed him doc

Her: but you didn't kill him

Me: yes, but the evidence pointed to me

Her: Evidence could be planted Yolanda. Just because the evidence points to you doesn't mean you are the one that committed the crime.

Me: I know that doc

Her: then why did you lie?

I shrugged

Me: because when I saw my sister I saw the little girl I grew up with and lived to protect, I couldn't let her go down for something she didn't do. In my mind I thought that he had died on the way there until I saw the pictures of him. Pictures of him all cut up

Her: and you still had the chance to come clean after seeing the pictures of him but you chose not to. Instead you asked your sister to skip town

Me: it was the best thing to do

She shook her head.

Her: you keep saying that you did everything you did for you daughter when in actual fact everything you did was for your ungrateful little sister. Triston was right about your sister because if she really did love you then she wouldn't have let you take the fall for her

I sighed

Her: Your lawyer applied for an appeal to present the video they found in your house

Me: but the video shows me stabbing him

Her: and it also shows your sister butchering him up like some meat

Me: no. Ivy is not capable of doing that

Her: was she not the one who kindly offered to take him to the hospital even after she had asked that you leave him to die. Yolanda your daughter needs you.

I nodded. To hear that my daughter cries herself to sleep calling my name breaks my heart to the core. Maybe it's about time I thought about her and nobody else

Her: your daughter needs you Yolanda. Think about her

I nodded.

Her: I would like for us to continue with our sessions even after you are out of here

Me: I would love that too doc. I never thought therapy would be this good

Her: you see? Talking to a stranger helps sometimes.

We had a brief conversation before I went to meet up with Ivy. She looked beautiful, the pregnancy looked good on her. I sat down opposite her.

Her: hey

Me: Hey. You look beautiful

Her: thank you.

She looked at me and tears rolled down her eyes

Me: hey don't cry please

Her: you here because of me. You the fall for me even after everything I did to you. Why did you do that red?

Me: that's because that's what sisters do for each other

Her: I haven't been much of a sister to you thou. I mean you needed me and I was never there for you. I should have insisted on taking the fall because I was the one that killed him and not you

Me: Ivy it's all in the past

She shook her head

Her: Your daughter has had to live without you because of me and I hate myself for that. Miso told me about the miscarriage

Me: Miso came to see you? Yvette I told you to leave town

She shook her head

Her: I couldn't leave you here alone Red. And yes Miso did come to see me and he said a lot of things that made sense. I should be here and not you Yolanda

Me: Ivy its ok. Tomorrow I'm going to court

Her: I promise you. Tomorrow at this time you will be holding your daughter in your arms

I smiled and rubbed her hands and she returned a smile too.

Me: how's pregnancy?

Her: hell. I just want to pop already

Me: you only 6 months Ivy chill

Her: sometimes I wish I'd aborted this baby

Me: don't speak like that

Her: it's only going to be a constant reminder of the hell its father put me through

Me: no. your baby will be a reminder that you survived it all. You're stronger than you think Yvette and I'm proud to call you my little sister

Her: Red

Me: yes

Her: please do me a favour

Me: uhhm ok...

Her: When I give birth please take care of my baby for me. I have an account for him or her, I've been saving ever since I don't know but I'm sure it will be enough to take care of him or her. I will give the papers that have everything to Miso when I see him ok. Please take care of my baby

I wiped a tear that managed to escape

Me: it's my niece, of cause I'd take care of her like she's mine.

She smiled through her tears and so did I. We spoke some more and then I was taken back to my cell.

.

.

THAT NIGHT – YVETTE

I could have taken my husband to the hospital but that was the most beautiful sight of him I had ever seen. So helpless and scared for a change. I won't lie it excited me to see him like that and I just wanted him to suffer. I had no choice but to finish him off. I had to do it for me and my sister because had I let him live then he would have hunted each one of us down. This was my chance to finally do right by my sister and be the sister she's been to me all these years. I drove down to an abandoned

warehouse and started stabbing him countless times, I don't know what got over me, I guess the anger I had been holding in for so long took over me and I just kept on stabbing him everywhere until you could barely recognise his face and body. My only mistake was to not get rid of my sister's shirt that she had placed on the bleeding area because then it became evidence for the crime. I knew that the Spritz would look for him and find him there. I'm surprised it took them 3 days to find him seeing how much of an asset he is to them. Red called me that day but I couldn't face her just yet. After the body was found I went to hand myself in and when she found out I was in prison she tried to save me but instead all evidence pointed to her and she was more than willing to take the fall for me. I tried to get her not to do this for me, I really did but my sister is a goodhearted person and she takes care of other peoples needs before herself. Me handing myself in made it seem like I was there to cover up for my sister. The Spritz didn't make things easy for her because here she is locked up in prison because of me. As if that wasn't bad enough

Advertisement

three months later I found out I was pregnant with his child, my first thought was to get an abortion but Red convinced me not to and I listened. It hasn't been easy but I'm coping. I don't have anyone but my sister now and her family hates my guts.

They blame me for everything that happened to Red, her mother went as far as saying she curses the day she met me so yeah. That's my life and I have to make things right. I know many would ask why the sudden change of heart when I let my sister stay in prison for a whole 6 months... truth is there wasn't any change of heart, I've been wanting to do this for a long time but Red wouldn't let me do this for her, instead she told me to skip the country and go live my life and that's what I did, for a while until I decided that this wasn't working for me so I decided to go back to LA and when I got there I met up with Miso who wasn't afraid to speak his mind and tell me to get my shiit together and get my sister out of there. Miso loves Red, she is blessed to have someone that loves her the way this guy loves her because some of us aren't so lucky.

.

.

3 MONTHS LATER

Yvette gave birth to a beautiful baby boy yesterday night... my predictions were wrong I guess. The case was a success but my sister was subjected to parole after serving 25 years in prison. She got lucky because it came out that Triston was abusive towards her and she lost 4 children because of him and so the judge was lenient towards her so that's good I guess. My daughter was happy to have me back and I was happy to be

back to her. Miso and I were good... We were more than good if you ask me. We lived together and soon we were going to move to South Africa, my daughter loves it there anyway and so does her dad so I figured why not. Miso and I were in bed cuddling.

Me: thank you

Him: for?

Me: making me see what's important. Knocking some sense into my head. Convincing me to be selfish for a change and think about my family first before anyone else. Miso I love you.

Him: I love you too Buttercup

Me: Marry me

I clasped my mouth. That came out unexpected. He chuckled

Him: what did you say?

Just then my phone rang

Him: ignore it

Me: it could be important

I said rolling over to take it, it was the prison. I answered

PC

Me: hello

Person: hi, may I please speak to Yolanda Graham

Me: this is she

Her: we would like you to come down to the station. There's been an accident

Me: an accident? What do you mean?

Her: please just come to the station

Me: uhm... I'm on my way then

Her: have a great day

End Of PC

I swallowed hard. What's so important that she couldn't tell me over the phone?

Miso: everything ok?

Me: I have to go down to the station.

Him: uhm ok let's get ready I'll drive you

Me: thanks

I got up to go shower. When I came out he was done making the bed and sitting on the bed waiting on me all dressed up. With clothes laid out on the bed for me. When I was done we headed downstairs and told Kendra's nanny to take care of

Kendra as we were going to be back soon. We got to the station and they led us to the hospital

Me: is my sister ok?

Nurse: I am sorry Miss Graham but we found your sister dead this morning

Me: what do you mean. I don't understand

This whole time Miso's arm was around my waist

Her: when we got to her room this morning she had passed on

Me: how? How does someone just die?

Her: it seems like she was suffocated to death

Me: so someone killed her?

Her: it seems so

Me: where is her baby?

Her: the baby is missing

Chapter 51

Me: how the fuck does a baby go missing in a fucking prison?

Miso: Bu

Me: Don't. Just don't. You answer me

Her: Miss we don't know what happened

Me: you don't know? I am going to sue this whole place for negligence.

Her: Ma'am I'm sorry

Me: sorry won't bring back my murdered sister and her missing son dammit!

I was beyond pissed. God how could they be so careless. She's a prisoner, they not supposed to be left alone. I would know because they kept a close eye on me at all times when I was here. She kept quiet

Me: I want my nephew found at all costs!

.

.

A FEW MONTHS LATER

Ivy had a dignified funeral and we still haven't found my nephew even now. We even went as far as hiring a PI but we

haven't gotten anything. Sometimes I feel like giving up because it feels like a dead end, where do you even begin looking for a 1 day old baby who is now 4 months old? I never even got a picture of the baby so even if I saw him I wouldn't know it was him. My hope is that we find him one way or the other. It hasn't been easy coping but I take it one day at a time. My main focus was my daughter, I needed to make up for all the lost times and she was growing to look more and more like me. We were in SA permanently but we kept my house in the states for holidays. We were in the lounge and I was laying on his chest, I dropped Kendra off at some restaurant where one of her friends was hosting their birthday which meant on hers we had to bring it... Kids her in SA or maybe all around the world feel the need to go beyond their friend's birthday party, it's something I recently noticed because every party Kendra has attended she comes back saying it was bigger and better than the last whereas when we lived in the states we hardly got that or maybe I never really noticed it back in the states. Anyway we were just sitting and watching a reality show or something, I wasn't really paying much attention to it because I was playing Candy Crush on Miso's phone with him.

Him: so Buttercup

Me: yes

Him: that morning... Were you serious

Me: which morning

I pretended to be lost

Him: that morning we had to rush to prison

Me: oh

Him: yeah. Still wanna marry me?

Me: if I say yes will you drop this?

Him: no ways. I'm only raising this because I want you to ask me again

I paused the game and turned to look at him. What?

Me: huh?

Him: you heard me

Me: uhhhm

Him: Ask me again

Me: and what if you say no?

Him: try me

I swallowed hard and then sat up right facing him with my legs crossed in front of me

Me: Marry me

Him: you asking me or demanding

I looked at him and sulked

Me: you know what? Never mind

Him: you are the least romantic person I know Buttercup.

Me: fine.

Him: don't tell me you sulking now

Me: you don't want to marry me

Him: I didn't say that

Me: so you'll marry me?

Him: of cause I'll marry you. Give me a kiss

I pouted and he planted a kiss on my lips making me giggle

Him: I want a real kiss

Me: you don't deserve it!

Him: but I said yes

Me: you the one that should have asked me and not the other way round

Him: how many times did I ask you to marry me first?

Me: don't be petty

Him: NO! I asked you more than 5 times to marry me and not once did you say yes. So it was your turn to ask me

Me: whatever

He pulled my hands to him making me fall and then he cupped my face and kissed me. I won't lie I couldn't resist him

Advertisement

I fell for his kiss and we ended up doing other things on the couch. We were covered up with a fleece when we heard a car pull up, I look at him

Him: did you lock the door?

I jumped off him and ran upstairs leaving him there to clean up the mess. I wore a gown and when I got downstairs he was dressed up and talking to his daughter

Her: you just woke up?

Me: no I just finished showering

I looked at Miso and found myself laughing at him, he rolled his eyes

Her: this is for you

Me: uhm thank you. So how was the party?

Her: it was too much. After the Spur we went to the park and she had clowns and stuff. It was too much

The way my daughter was dramatic is was adorable. Miso and I just laughed at her and her facial expressions. She may be

dramatic but she is not into over the top things and that's what I loved about her, she was a down to earth child. I opened the paper bag she had gave me and there was a box inside of it.

Me: what's this?

I said taking the box out

Them: open it

I looked at them sceptical while opening the box and there was a ring inside of it. a big rock. I looked at both of them

Her: dad had me keep it so that if you say yes I can give it to you... I take it you said yes

I smiled and nodded and so did she. She pulled me to her and gave me a tight squeeze and I kissed her forehead, she was so excited... more than me even. Miso slipped the ring on my finger and he kissed me and then hugged me with our little one between us. We broke the hug

Her: finally!

Me: What?

Her: finally, you and dad get to be like normal people. Married

I laughed and so did her dad

Him: so we weren't normal when?

Her: of cause not. You guys lived together

Me: and living together is wrong?

She shrugged

Him: exactly.

Her: so when is the wedding? Can I be a bridesmaid?

I laughed. This person was only turning 8. Bridesmaid?

Me: aren't you a little young for that?

Him: you can be the flower girl

Her: I'm too old to be a flower girl dad and I guess I'm too young to be a bridesmaid

Me: you not too old to be a flower girl!

Her: fine....

Me: you were still telling me about the birthday party

Her: they bought her a puppy

Him: don't you want a puppy?

Her: pets are like having babies. They need to be taken care of and cleaned after and I don't have the time

I looked at her dad and he shrugged laughing. Where did I get this child? I laughed at her so hard. She was so entertaining.

Him: who told you all of this?

Her: a friend of mine from school. She has a puppy and she has to do everything for it. I wouldn't be able to shame

Me: ok Miss Sassy pants. Go shower and clean up your face

Her: first let's take pictures and then I'll go. You have a ring to show off remember?

I just laughed. I didn't even know what to say to her anymore. I kneeled down to be on her level and started posing for the selfies, she made me show my ring. Said she wanted to send the pictures to her grandparents. After all the picture taking she went to shower.

Him: she gets it from you

Me: NO! she gets it from her cousins

Him: right. whatever makes you sleep at night

Me: so did she see you?

Him: I didn't not know you were so mean! How dare you leave me like that

Me: looks like you got dressed pretty quick to me

Him: I had no choice

Me: what did you do with my dress?

Him: keep asking!

Me: babe come on

Him: I'm still mad at you

Me: I'll make it up to you

I said with a wink and he didn't pay no attention to me

Me: come on

Him: nope. Let me go shower

Me: just like that?

He didn't respond instead he walked out. God my future husband can be dramatic. I see where his daughter gets the drama from. I decided to order pizza cause I was lazy to cook and I'm sure Missy was full from the party. I went to take a shower and Miso was still inside. Pizza takes about 30 to 40 min to get to our house so might as well make use of the time. I hugged him from behind

Him: I thought you were cooking

Me: I guess I'm not

I said with my hands on his manhood.

Him: and then?

Me: you want me to stop?

He shook his head so quick I laughed at him. I went in front of him and went on my knees and did my thing until he released and then after we dried our bodies and then went downstairs all dressed up in loose fitted clothes. I was wearing a loose dress and he was wearing sweatpants and a t-shirt with his sleepers. We watched tv waiting on the pizza.

Chapter 52

"Yolanda you ready"

I turned around and it was my brother standing by the door lookin at me through the mirror... Was I ready? Is that even a question thou? I'm about to spend the rest of my life with my best friend carrying his second born... Of cause I'm ready. I smiled through my teary eyes. When I was 5 I always imagined myself marrying my best friend being walked down the aisle by my daddy and when the rape started all my dreams were shattered into pieces because I didn't believe that someone like me could ever have a life like the one I have. To say I'm happy is an understatement, I am excited, scared, ecstatic, impatient even. The life I never imagined myself having has always been, I didn't imagine being a rape survivor but here I am today stronger than anyone I know. I didn't imagine being the amazing mother I to my daughter but today I am and she is more proud to have me as a mother and I am even more proud to have her as a daughter. I didn't think I'd spend a night in prison let alone 6 months but I did all for my sister and here I am today this woman that I am with a sense of piece knowing that every sacrifice I made didn't go unaccounted for. I am soon to marry my best friend

Advertisement

sans-serif; mso-bidi-font-family:"Segoe UI Symbol"> 𐀀 ... What can I say? The life I never imagined for myself is everything the younger version of me has ever wished for and more. I wiped my tears careful not to smudge my make up.

Him: you ok?

I turned around and nodded.

Me: I'm great

Him: you look beautiful

I smiled as he kissed my forehead.

Him: no tears or else those women out there will kill me

I chuckled

Me: no more tears. Thank you

Him: for?

Me: being the asshole you once were to me only to become the best twin a girl could ask for and an amazing example of what to look for in a husband

Him: it doesn't get any better than Miso Lala. You hit the jackpot there. That guy loves you without any conditions and he would go to the ends of the earth for you. You have a daughter that adores you more than anything in this world and

a family that would do anything to see you happy. I don't know what blessings look like but this right here are blessings

Me: you making me cry

He took a handkerchief and patted my teary eyes and then he held out his arm and I hooked my arm to his and we walked out. It was finally happening. Everything I've only ever dreamed of was happening. The minute we got to the end of the aisle, Miso's eyes were on me glistening with joy. He had that smile of his with teary eyes, I found myself blushing. My husband was crying at the sight of me. We walked on the roses until we reached him and Yonda handed me over to him. He went to take his seat and so did everyone

Him: you look beautiful Buttercup

Me: you clean up pretty well yourself

We turned to look at the pastor. He said a few important things and then it was time to say our vows. Miso went first

Him: I could write a book about the love I have for you but then I'd run out of paper and ink because my love for you wouldn't fit on any amount of pages. Yolanda from the minute I met you I knew that you would make my life difficult

I gave him a look and he chuckled. How dare he say that in front of everyone?

Him: if you guys could see the way shes looking at me right now. As I was saying. I knew that I wanted it to be you who makes my life difficult while making it better than it was before you came into it. I remember the first time you told me you love me, how you quickly covered your face with your hands because you yourself couldn't believe what you had just told me. I knew then and there that you were the perfect one. You have given me the greatest gift any man could ever ask for and I'm more than grateful for you and how you've been an amazing mother to me and our daughter. I know we can be the most difficult people to live with but not once have you complained but instead you love us more than anything in this world and you make us the best we can be. I love you Mrs Me. My buttercup

He wiped my tears. I looked at the paper I was holding that I had written my vows on and handed it to my sister In-law

Me: Bubbles. God where does one even start? I had written my vows down on paper but after that I figured I'll speak from the heart instead. You came into my life and turned it upside down and inside out...

He looked at me and chuckled and people laughed

Me: you made me a mother before time and here i am carrying your second born... I hope you see my point but despite it all I would do it all over again because mothering your children has

got to be the best job ever because you don't let me do it alone. Kendra is lucky to have you as a father but me, I'm blessed to have you in my life and to be marrying you because there's no man I'd rather be bonded to for life either than you. I can't wait to keep arguing with you about what to wear at work and whether to have chicken pie or beef pie when we cook. Which bottle of wine to buy or not. I suck at expressing myself but you just made me do it in public because only you are capable of doing that me. Thank you for being there for me at all times and for being an amazing father to our daughter and an even amazing partner to me. I love you so much Misokuhle Bess

He was smiling from ear to ear. We exchanged rings and then were pronounced husband and wife and then we shared a kiss. We broke it after a while and just looked into each others eyes before turning to the croud. I was a Mrs Misokuhle Bess. I was happy or at least was for that little while. It was the reception and we had just taken our seats when Yonda came to whisper in my ear.

Me: what is it?

Him: there is a man outside and he wants to speak to you

Me: about?

Him: its about Ivy's baby

Chapter 53 - FINALE

The one day i'm supposed to be the happiest, zero destructions, no nothing. just a happy day for me and my family. I couldn't handle any bad news on that day. I turned to my husband who was holding my hand this whole time, from the minute we walked in to the people making speeches and at that moment his brother, I didn't want Aya making any speeches on my wedding day... yep she still didn't like me for reasons known to her. This one time after the whole Triston thing she was more than happy to give me a piece of her mind and she said a lot of BS and how I will never be part of her family... so no, I don't need her ass saying shiit about me on my wedding day.

Him: Everything ok?

Me: It's about Ivy's son

Him: uhhm ok... lets go

Me: no stay, I'll be back ok.

Him: you sure?

Me: yeah I'm sure. I'll be back right now

I kissed his cheek and he let go of my hand and then I got up with Yonda. When I got outside, I was met by Click- Aya's ex-husband. They ended things when he she found out about his

involvement with the \$pritz. I was shocked to see him here with some model looking woman.

Me: Mr Noland

Him: please, call me Rodney. This is uhhm a friend of mine Laila

Her: Hi

Me: I'm Yolanda. Uhhm my brother said this was about my sister's child?

He opened the door and there was a baby in a car sitter in the backseat of the car. He was sleeping and he looked a few months old. God he was so adorable. I looked up at him

Him: meet your nephew

I looked at him still stunned. What was going on?

"What's going on here? Rodney what are you doing here?"

I turned and Aya was standing right behind us. This woman is dramatic AF.

Her: And who is this?

Laila: Hi, I'm Laila

She said pulling her hand out to Aya and Aya just looked at it with her arms crossed looking at her ex-husband. I think she was jealous

Laila: ok...

Click: Aya hi. How are you?

Her: don't. Don't give me that

Me: Thank you Rodney. Thank you so much. Are you sure?

Him: Yes. Uhhm is there anywhere private where we can talk? I know it's your wedding day and all, If I'd known I wouldn't have brought him today

Me: uhhm please come this way.

I walked inside the house with everyone pretty much following me, including Aya. The wedding was held at Miso's great grandfather's house the original David Bess. The reception was held in a tent in the backyard. Laila put the baby on top of the table, I couldn't keep my eyes off of him. he was just too beautiful. How could something so beautiful come out of such crazy people?

Me: He's perfect

Laila gave a smile

Aya: what the hell is going on here? Whose baby is this?

Me: this is my nephew.

Laila: his name is Justice... that's what his mother named him

Me: you know my sister?

Click: Your sister was involved with a dangerous man and she did a terrible thing. Laila was posing as a nurse in the prison your sister was in. She walked in on the nurse who killed your sister but she was too late to save your sister so she saved the baby instead. We've been raising the child somewhere safe. I didn't tell you sooner because I knew that the Spritz were looking for the baby as much as you were and had they found the baby then they would have killed him. Now I know you mad at me for keeping this from you but it was the only way to keep the child safe and out of harm's way. I needed to get right with the Spritz and convince them that the baby was killed so that they could stop looking

Me: So is the baby safe now?

Laila: the little one is safe. Nobody is looking for me

Me: are you sure Laila?

Her: yes

Advertisement

I'm sure.

"is everything ok?"

I turned around and it was mom speaking

Her: Yolanda?

Me: Mom come and see Ivy's son

Mom: he's alive?

I saw a smile curve on her lips with some shock. I nodded with teary eyes. She walked closer to us and she looked at the baby

Her: he's perfect. But How?

Me: mom it's a long story. Uhhm this is Rodney and this is Laila

They greeted each other

Mom: Lala you are needed outside

I had even forgotten it was my wedding. I nodded and asked them to stay until the wedding was over. We still needed to talk some more, I needed some answers which I could only get after the reception. I walked back in and I couldn't be happier. I sat next to my husband and they were singing traditional songs and it was just amazing. My Reception was a traditional Xhosa wedding ceremony or whatever it's called with the giving of blankets and stuff later on after the speeches. There were people dancing traditional dances wearing your beautiful Xhosa attires and looking all kinds of beautiful. I was in a traditional Xhosa dress looking all kinds of beautiful with a doek on my head... Thanks to Yaya for making me look this beautiful. he looked at me

Him: everything good?

I nodded like a little child

Me: he's alive and he's here

Him: really?

I nodded again

Me: he's beautiful.

Him: I can imagine

Me: you'll meet him after

Him: where is he now?

Me: with my mom and Click and Laila and your sister

Him: Click is back?

Me: he's had him this whole time together with Laila

Him: Laila?

Me: some woman he was with. I don't know what she is to him

Him: Aya can't be happy with Laila

Me: don't know and don't care. Let's get back to our day

He smiled and kissed my cheek. I watched as they finished their routine and then they went to take their seats leaving us clapping our hands for them. After that they welcomed my

mother and father in law. They still looked beautiful even in their 50's, Yaya was still in good shape and so was her man.

Yaya: you guys look beautiful. Perfect even

I mouthed "thank you" and Yaya nodded with a smile

Her: finally! After all this time you finally said yes, thank you for that.

We all laughed. God she was putting me on the spot

Her: hide all you want but you know it's true. Anyway we not here to talk about that. Miss Graham I'm a proud mother right now because of you. I raised him up but you groomed me for him. There was a time when Miso wanted to quit varsity

He gave his mom a look

Her: you never told me not to mention it baby. As I was saying, all of us tried to convince him that he was making a mistake. I even went as far as telling him that I would stop paying for his fees if he quit his course to do something else after all the money we spent

Miso looked down laughing. I know my husband must be feeling some type of way

Her: Had it not been for that beautiful woman sitting next to him then he wouldn't be the man he is right now. Yolanda thank you so much for everything you have done for my son,

thank you for making him the man he is and the amazing father that he is to my granddaughter. Baby treat that woman right. You made a great choice, never let her go. Yolanda if he's giving you any trouble at all you know my number and you know where to find me... I'm never too old to whoop that ass.

We all laughed

Her: We will talk about the rest when we together, I don't want to embarrass you two in front of all these people here

I laughed. God I love my mother in law.

Her: I love you both and may the good Lord continue blessing you and showering you with nothing but love.

I blew her a kiss. God where did I get such an amazing woman? She handed the mic to her husband

Him: I think my wife has said it all. Miso, you never too old to get an ass whooping. Don't make that woman cry, EVER! The tears of a woman don't fall on deaf ears, especially a God fearing woman. Her God is always listening and he loves her so much that everything you have worked so hard to build you would watch it all come crumbling down into nothingness. I would know. Yolanda treat that man right; I have seen how much he loves you. Love like that I have only ever witnessed it with my late father and mom and you are fortunate enough because you met them both and you witnessed the love they

shared so you know what real love is and what it should be like. Welcome to our family baby and I trust you with my son and I trust him with you. Uhhm we love you both and treat each other right, be an example to your daughter and the baby you are carrying right now. Your kids are lucky to have such parents like you. Keep that up ok. I love you both

I couldn't help but shed a little tear. God these people were the best? Ever been loved so much you even fear that something will come and steal this love away from you? That was me. My sister's child is alive. My daughter is amazing, and I have a baby on board plus I am married to my bestfriend. Could life get any better?

.....**THE END**.....

